

*My better half

Compiled by

NovelsRepublic

* My better half

(high school crush)

By authoress prudence ....

★prologue★

Caira Hudson a young, beautiful, hot, smart and vibrant 18 years old girl who lost her dad to the cold hand of death in early age, and ever since that incident, things have never been easy for she and her mum (mrs.elena), they struggled to make a living, things got worse for them after her mother lost her job, Soo caira had to drop out of school. She later decided to take up a scholarship exam, (at the camford high scholars academy) since their

was no hope for her to go back to school.....

Meet Mikel camford the school playboy, 19years old, stinky rich, arrogant, hot tempered and very handsome. His father is the CEO of the camford high scholars academy, he is every girls dream,.. he only dealt with rich girls, Soo he despised & avoided caira and never paid attention to caira, despite her looks.

...caira was later compelled to take up a job at the camford's family as a house keeper due to financial crisis, and had to live with MIKEL !!! will Mikel fall in love with caira or keep seeing her as the common low life whom he can never date.....

Find out about what transpired between the two opposite class, in the most thrilling and adventurous story of caira and Mikel

My better half

(high school crush)

By authoress prudence ....

★episode 3★

Caira's POV

I quickly put on my clothes and ran to Noah for coverage, there was this expression on his face that I couldn't comprehend. Mr Alex just stood fuming in anger and disappointment.

Caira: Noah, thank you Soo much, let's quickly leave here, then I can tell you all that happened.

I went ahead of him, while he trailed behind me slowly.

we got outside, and I was expecting him to ask me if I was alright but he didn't say anything, i was about saying something when he spoke.....

Noah:caira, why!! why have you decided to repay me this way, you know..... if you wanted something

you could have at least just ask.

There was a missed expression of anger and sadness in his face as he spoke, I was so confused and didn't know what he was talking about

Caira: whatare you talking about Noah

Noah: shut up caira!! I caught you red-handed, are you still trying to deny the fact that you've been having an affair with my dad??

I was so shocked immediately he said those words.

Caira: you got it all wrong Noah, I wasn't having an affair with your dad, your dad was the one was trying to rape me.....!!!

Noah's POV

Immediately she said those words about my dad I didn't realise when I slapped her, I know my dad to be a very upright man, i trust him Soo much.
women can never be his problem

Becca's POV

I was upstairs watching the two lovers fight through the window, I have never been So happy in my entire life, the part that interested me the most was when Noah slapped caira i couldn't believe that my plan actually worked, caira had told me earlier that Mr Alex had been making advances to her, but she didn't know how to tell Noah, because she don't Know how he would react.

(FLASHBACK)

(Earlier today.... not long had caira entered into Mr Alex office when Noah called me asking if caira was present at work today, so I answered "yes". I knew that Noah was probably coming to see caira at work again!! so I locked caira in Mr Alex office, using one of Mr Alex office spare key)

(END OF FLASHBACK)

. My initial plan was just to make Noah suspicious of caira but I didn't expect that my plan could break up the perfect couples, I don't think caira deserves Noah..... Ever since Noah came back from Germany where he was schooling and visited the A&X stores, all the female workers had been all over Noah, they all dreamt of having him for their self, we all put on the best of our dresses and makeup in order to impress him but he ended up settling for that lowlife caira, and ever since they started dating, my life had been miserable. It had always been caira! Caira!! and caira!!!

Anytime Noah came visiting caira in the store, he always came with a lot of gifts for her, I had been loving him and making a lot of body contacts to him but he had never noticed me Now what I need to do is to make sure that they don't get back together , but first, I must ensure that Noah

didn't mention my name at the cause of the argument.

Caira's POV

I ran back home as fast as my leg could carry, I still couldn't believe that Noah slapped me, and ended our relationship. I entrusted him with my virginity but this is how he paid me back!!!, he promised me that no barrier in this life would ever stumble into our relationship, but he broke his promise, I guess he never trusted me right from the beginning!!!

When I got home, good thing my mom was not home, so I went straight to my room and cried my eyes out till I fell asleep

.....

I woke up from a hand tapping on my back repeatedly, it was my mum..

Mrs Elena: jezz girl!!! You don't look Soo good, have you been crying?

Caira: no mum, I guess.... it is because I slept for a long time.....I answered weakly

Mrs Elena: ok sweetie, your friend Becca is in the sitting room waiting, she wants to see you...

Caira: Becca??

My better half

(high school crush)

By authoress prudence ....

DO NOT COPY OR REPOST

★Episode 1★

Caira's POV

It all started in the ballet class, our ballet teacher (Mrs Fiona) was in the front of the class dancing while we followed her steps, not long after, I heard

my phone ringing out loud, distracting everyone..

oops

Mrs Fiona: who's phone was that

Caira: sorry ma'am, it was mine

Fiona: I keep telling you to always put your phones on silent whenever you are coming to my class

Caira: am Soo sorry ma'am, that should be my mum, I'll just check it out. I quickly rushed to my bag pack to check out the sms, I have been expecting my weekly pay for the past 3 days now, I opened my message box just to find out that the message was from the camford high scholars academy, OMG, that was where I applied for a scholarship program....i read through it and was shocked by what i was seeing i had been admitted to camford high school, after Soo many years i can finally go to school.....

Out of excitement, I quickly rushed out of the class

without bidding madame Fiona farewell, I saw my bestie (Kaylee) running after me, but I didn't bother to stop, I really need to tell my mum about my success and also see my stupid boss and tell him that I am no longer interested in his offer.....

When I got home my mum was in the kitchen preparing my meal

Caira:mum I did it!!, I won the scholarship

Mrs Elena: yes my dear, I always knew you could do it, rejecting your scholarship proposal doesn't mean you can't re-apply again, I am so happy for you, finally I don't need to worry about your education, please let's celebrate your victory

(My mum spoke lovingly patting my hair, she had always been so caring and had played the role of both a mum and a dad ever since my father died, whenever my scholarship proposal was rejected she always encouraged me to never give up and keep reapplying, until I get what I want.)

Caira: thank u mum, but I ghat resignation letter to submit

Mrs Elena: okay dear just be careful.

MIKEL'S POV

Mikel was seating on a sofa playing a video game when his dad's secretary (Zoey) walked in

Zoey:sir she re-applied again but this time I just had to accept her scholarship proposal and offer her the scholarship

Mikel: who's that

Zoey: who else, if not miss caira Hudson who keeps re-applying every month and not giving up

Mikel: alright, suit your self.

Zoey walked seductively to Mikel and said..

Zoey: sir, you know.....it has been a while since we had a little fun. She spoke with a seductive voice that could turn any man on

Mikel: what do you want this time Zoey

Zoey: I was just thinking if... you have no one to warm up your bed tonight, I am also available.(gosh why am I being so nervous)

Mikel: never mind Zoey, I have an appointment with Salome tonight, Soo...yours will be tomorrow.

Zoey: okay sir.....can we at least have a quicky before I leave, you know...am less busy right now

Mikel: get the hell out of my room Zoey and make your self busy.

Zoey: okay

.....Zoey walked out of Mikel's room feeling Soo bad, she couldn't believe he rejected her offer..

Mikel: what a cheap b*tch ...

... TBC

...

...

UNEDITED EPISODE

My better half

(high school crush)

By authoress prudence✍️....

★episode 2★

caira's POV

I walked down to the A&X supermarket, that was where I worked as a sales attendant, I really needed to give my boss a piece of my mind, he had refused paying me my weekly allowance just because I refused to have s*x with him, as I approached Mr Alex's office, I opened the door rudely without knocking, when he saw me, there was a mischievous smile that formed on his face.

Mr Alex: miss caira Hudson, I always knew you will come back begging me for my generous offersoo, what are you waiting for, take off your clothes and get on the table.

Caira: actually sir, that is not what am here for, I came to tell you that I am no longer interested in your job and stupid offer.....

There was a look of surprise on his face immediately I said that. He slowly reached out to his drawer and brought out a bundle of money

Mr Alex: my dear caira, if you can only cooperate with me, all these money are yours, and I promise to increase your weekly and monthly pay, you don't even really have to come to work † ♂

Caira: I quickly turned my back to leave, in order to escape his temptation, but when i turned the door knob, i noticed that the door was locked

Mikel's POV

The b*tch moaned loudly as I banged her a*s real hard... I spanked her @ss and rode her, not long

after, I reached the climax, I pulled out and release on the floor.

Janelle: oh my gosh, Mikel that was a really good one....

Mikel: before am done with the bathroom, I want you to be out of my room

Janelle: alright dear I will just see you in school then, bye baby

Mikel ignored her and walked grumpingly to the bathroom, he rested in the bathtub and was having a nice warm water bath, when he heard his room door open followed by a familiar voice, it was zack, his best friend.

Zack: dude your room is Soo messy!!, Soo tell me... Who was here?? Zoey right?

Mikel: nope, the class b*tch

Zack: Janelle??

Mikel: yeah

Zack: don't u think it's high time you get a real girlfriend,.....I mean someone that can be your date on prom night

Mikel: am working towards that

Zack: and how are you doing that huh? By f*cking all @sses in school?

Mikel: I wouldn't say all,..... just some few selected @ss,

caira's POV

I was visibly shaking as I turned the door knob just to discover that the door was locked, I turned around and saw Mr Alex smiling mischievously

Mr Alex: Soo you really think you can come into my office and leave as you please? ...if you can cooperate with me, you will have all this money

Caira: am not interested, please just open your door and let me go.....

Mr Alex got angry and left his desk, he walked slowly to caira, while caira kept retreating back on till her back hit the wall and there was no where to run to.

Mr Alex: I wanted to do this a nice way, but you refuse, Soo have it your way.

He grabbed caira forcefully by the hand and pushed her to the table, then, he brought out a dagger and pointed it towards her

Mr Alex: take off your clothes immediately and don't make any silly noise

Caira: i didn't even realize that I was crying, I took off my clothes slowly while Mr Alex watched probably enjoying the sight in front of him, I took off my shirt, and trousers, and was about taking off my bra when we heard a knock at the door, at first

we ignored but the knock came again, this time more louder, Then I heard a very familiar voice,it was Noah, my boyfriend and Mr Alex only son

I was Soo relieved because I thought he was probably there to rescue me

Noah's POV

I was shocked to my bones when Becca (Caira's friend) told me that caira is having sex with my dad(Mr Alex) in his office, I and caira had been dating for over 3 years now and I have been very supportive to she and her mum, † ♂
† ♂ I still couldn't believe that caira could stoop so low to the point of cheating on me not even with anyone else but with my dad, and all because of money, I actually brought the money she asked for, but after what Becca told me, I don't think caira deserves this money again, I was about going out when Becca told me to go and challenge caira and end things with her...

Becca: seriously Noah? Are you just going to walk out like a coward and pretend like nothing ever happened?? Be a man, go into that room, and give that bitch a piece of your mind

I walked angrily to the door and knocked, at first there was no response but I knocked again, thankfully I had my dad office spare key in my pocket, so I quickly unlocked the door my self, when I opened the door I saw the unbelievable
I caught caira half naked in my father's office!!!

.. TBC

..

..

My better half
(high school crush)

By authoress prudence 📖....

Do not copy or repost

★ episode 4&5★

Noah's POV

I marched angrily to my dad's office, when I got inside, I met him seating Soo relaxed like nothing ever happened.

Noah: dad, what was the meaning of that?

Mr Alex: of what??.....he asked with a look of pretence

Noah: dad, don't you act like you don't know what happened, you were with my girlfriend!!!

Mr Alex: Soo?

Noah: dad you know what am talking about, don't you give me that sh*t!!! I have all right to
(Noah wasn't able to complete his statement when his dad hit him hard across the face)

Mr Alex: how dare you Noah, you ain't got no right over anything, what gives you the right to talk to me in such manner, who told you that you are now man enough to drag a woman with me!! And what do you even think I could do with your baby girlfriend

(Mr Alex placed his hands on Noah's shoulder and said...)

Mr Alex: my dear son, you are way too young for this stupidity you are displaying, you have overstayed your welcome, Soo..... when you get home, start packing up your junks because you would be leaving for school next week.

Noah: dad, I already told you that I.....

Mr Alex: that's final,now get out (Mr Alex stated calmly)

Becca's POV

I sat impatiently waiting for caira to come down, I was Soo nervous as I sat, I just hope Noah didn't involve me in the argument. After few minutes of waiting, I sighted caira walking down the stairs weakly, she looked so pale as she came down, I quickly rushed to her to help her down the stairs, not like I actually cared, but just to make it look like I cared.

Becca: caira what's happening dear, you look Soo pale.

Caira: thanks for your concern Becca,...I think am falling ill.....she lied

Becca: I actually saw what happened between you and Noah today,....i am Soo sorry I couldn't interfere, I just thought it would be wise to give you two some space to sort things out,.... soo tell me caira, what really happened between you both..... (Becca asked Feigning a look of concern).....

Becca's POV

At first caira was quiet and wasn't answering, but I really needed to convince her into trusting me, Soo I persisted.

Becca: caira, am your friend, remember?, You can confide in me, am here to help you.

Caira explained all that I already knew about, while I listened with gladness in my heart but I tried as much as possible to keep a sad expression.

Becca: Soo that jerk actually had the mind to lay his filthy hands on you?? I asked in pretence, caira just kept crying silently all the while

Becca: so what are you planning to do regarding the situation at hand??

Caira: I think I would just go and see Noah later, (caira said in tears) this must be a misunderstanding, I wouldn't just sit and

.....(Caira wasn't able to finish her speech when Becca cut in)

Becca: NO caira!!! No, you are not the one at fault, Noah is!!, Soo I don't think you should apologize for anything!! can't you see?? Noah doesn't love and trust you, that's why he's accusing you of cheating on him.i said alarmed

Caira: Becca you really don't under.....

Becca: understand what exactly?? (I said partially angry,)

That he don't trust you? Don't worry about Noah my dear, every disappointment is a blessing, look at you caira, you are so beautiful, there are thousands of men out there, longing to date you ...Soo find yourself another man alright??, and forget about that jerk, Noah doesn't deserve a queen like you...(I said sarcastically)

Noah's POV

When I got back home, I was so exhausted, I really think I have acted foolishly enough for one day, I felt Soo stupid, I could have at least allowed caira to explain her self, I felt even more stupid for hitting her † ♂ † ♂ but she should understand my inability to control my anger sometimes,.... I know caira, she needs me and can never take this little misunderstanding as a break up, and she shouldn't take my words seriously. soo...she would surely come around someday,

† ♂ † ♂

I really don't know who to trust anymore, caira or my dad??...for now, I think I should just give her some space.

kindly hi novelsrepublic on WhatsApp on plus two three four eight zero five five eight eight nine one right three to get added to the novels group

(.. Noah packed up his luggages, he was going back

to Germany the next week like his father said.)

caira's POV

I saw Becca off, she was really a life saver and comforter, after all that she had said today I really think Noah truly never cared about me, I don't know how long it might take me to get over the feelings I have for Noah, but I was Soo glad she was there when I needed somebody, today, she taught me to focus on my life and not let any guy depress me all in the name of relationship, though I am still sad I lost my first love, but I just have to move on, like Becca said, "it's not advisable to beg Noah when he is the one at fault, if not, he might think am begging him for the relationship to stand, and he might never take me serious if we keep on dating, Soo....for now, I think I just have to let Noah be, if he truly loves me, then he would come back to apologize,...I just hope he comes back

Becca's POV

Oh my gosh!!... She really bought it??... Lily my friend said amidst laughter

Becca: of cause dear, I never knew I was such an inspirational and and sweet talker until today...(I also said amidst laughter)

Lily: Soo what's your plan B big brain....she teased

Becca: mission accomplished baby girl, they are separated and separated for ever

Lily: hold on smart @ss what if Noah decides to call her??

Becca: oh don't bother about that, he won't be able to reach her! because, while she was busy crying , I was able to put Noah's phone number in blacklist using her phone, but I still need to convince Noah, so I can be rest assured that they won't call each other.....

I picked up my phone and dialed Noah's number.

caira's POV

After I saw Becca off I went straight to the bathroom to wash off the stream lines of tears on my face , I really needed to focus on resuming my new school next week, I went to my mum's room and met her dressing up like she was going out, when she saw me, she lightened up a bit like she had been expecting me

Caira: mum, are you going out??

Mrs Elena: yes dear, not just me, but the both off us.....she said smiling

Caira: to where exactly?

Mrs Elena: you Know caira, you would be resuming your new School next week.....

Caira: yes mum, I am aware.... I said calmly

Mrs Elena: and like we both know, the camford

high school is not a place for poor or average live kid, I don't want my daughter to feel inferior in the midst of other rich students, SooI think we need to get you some new dresses.

Caira:mum, but nothing is wrong with the old one, they are perfectly fine.

Mrs Elena: don't get me wrong dear, am not saying that your old clothes are that bad, but you would be meeting with Soo many rich kids whose dad or mum are probably senators, rich business men/women and i don't just want you to feel Soo unfortunate in the midst of your peers, because you are not able to meet up with their standards, I don't want you to feel the vacuum of not having a dad,(She said lovingly)

Caira: mum, you know I don't really care about impressing anyone, but if you insist, then it's fine by me.....I said with a shrug

Mrs Elena: perfect!., But that's not all, Guess what

dear,

..... (she said excitedly)

Caira; what mum?

Mrs Elena: we will be shopping for your dresses at the '

"Glamorous unisex stall"

Caira: mum!! We can't shop there, that boutique is only for the Rich, their clothes cost a fortune and we can't afford that.....(I said alarmed!)

(... the glamorous unisex stall was a boutique for the Rich because their clothes were hell expensive, only celebrities and models could afford their dresses.)

Mrs Elena: don't worry about the Money my dear, I just got paid today,... my pay would be enough to get you two or three dresses (probably).....

Now go dress up.....she said pushing me out of

the room gently

Mikel and Zack were both seated in the car, Zack was driving while Mikel was at the back seat, busy with his phone, Mikel had an urgent call at one of his modeling agency and he had to select some new clothes for the modeling contract

They packed their car at The parking lot, in front of the "glamorous unisex stall"

..

..TBC

UNEDITED EPISODE

My better half

(high school crush)

By authoress prudence ....

DON'T COPY OR REPOST

★episode 6★

caira's POV

It took me and mum a lot of effort to get to the "glamorous unisex stall" but we finally got there.....

There was a lot of beautiful and classy dresses at the mall,as we walked along the hall way, I saw some one that caught my attention, it was mikel camford!!! OMG!!! He was looking Soo hot and handsome, he was also with someone else. I noticed every one in the mall, turning around to take a look at him, some were even taking pictures of him, I was still busy admiring him when my mum called out.

Mrs Elena: honey!., I think you should check out this dress.....she said holding out a long pink gown

Caira: no mum I'll do the picking my self.....I said in response

Caira's POV

I saw a very beautiful short gown that caught my attention, it was dangling inside an opaque glass with lights around it,....

Finally I have found the perfect dress I was looking for, I quickly rushed to get it, I opened the glass and took the dress out, there was a price tag written boldly on it "\$150" gosh!!! It was quite expensive, I was busy admiring the dress when someone grabbed the dress from my hands slowlyit was MIKEL!!!

mikel's pov

I saw a very classy dress that I thought would suit my sister Dianna, her birthday was in a week time, and she had been really pestering me about getting her a birthday present, I dont want what happened last year when I forgot to get her a birthday present repeat it self again. I was about going to get the dress when I saw a lady came

from no where and took the dress, I wasn't bothered at all, I went straight to her and took the dress from her gently, not minding what she would say or do, ...I was Soo taking this dress.

caira's POV

I was busy admiring the dress when someone took the dress from my hands, I turned immediately to see who it was, I was Soo shocked when I saw Mikel camford, he was standing so close to me, His fragrance was Soo killing, i was busy admiring him until he started walking away with my dress, I quickly rushed to collect my dress, if it was any other dress, I would have just let it be, but this is the only dress that caught my attention.....

Caira: sorry mister that was my dress....I said nervously

For a while he stopped to look at me, then he turned and kept going without saying anything, I got irritated and followed him...

Caira: I am talking to you..

He ignored me and kept on going, I got soo paranoid and I hastened my footstep and stood in front of him.

Caira: please hand over my dress right now, if not things are gonna get really crazy.....I grabbed the dress really tight.

Mikel: how much do you want so I can pay you off.....he stated calmly

Caira: ..I felt Soo annoyed when he said that,...
what did he take me for, a beggar??

he dipped his hands in his pocket and brought out a huge sum of money.

Mikel: take this for your troubles... ..he said giving me the money, but I got even more angrier

TBC

..

...

My better half

(high school crush)

By authoress prudence ....

★episode 7&8★

Caira's POV

I was about snatching the dress from his hands when my mum interfered

Mrs Elena: caira!! What do you think you are doing!!....(she ran to me and dragged me away from mikel's presence)

Mrs Elena: caira what do you think you are doing!! , do you have any idea who that was??....she said almost in a whisper

Caira: yes mum, that was Mikel camford, Soo f*cking what?? Because his dad is a billionaire doesn't actually mean he should go about

oppressing everyone, his dad is the CEO of the camford high scholars academy and many other companies abroad but not this mall !!

Mrs Elena: caira, listen to me, just let that dress go, there are many other dresses in the mall that you can choose from!!

Caira: NO, I am going back there to collect my Dress.....I said walking away,

I got to Mikel and saw him with another guy walking towards the exit door... I walked boldly to him and blocked the exit door

Caira: Mikel or whatever you call your self, you better hand over my dress right now or else you are not going anywhere!,,.....I said blocking the exit door

Zack: young lady please just let this dress go, you would surely find a better.....

Caira: I am not finding any other dress!! (I cut in).

want my dress back,... I said at the top of my voice.

Mikel slowly walked away to the cashier, while I smirked in victory, he was probably going to return the dress and get a refund of his money,.....

few minutes later, a security woman came and started asking me some weird questions

Security woman: miss what's your full name?

Caira: caira Hudson,....I answered rather perplexed

Security woman: soo, you said that young man over there collected your dress, right?....she said pointing her index finger at mikel.

Caira: yes ma'am,.....I answered feeling Soo relieved.

Security woman: okay Miss, I am from the customers complaint department and I would like you to fill this complaint form.....she said handing over a form to me.

Caira: uhmm..... ma'am, my complain isn't really serious, I just want him to return my dress, that's all,....I don't really want trouble for anyone. You can just tell him to return my dress,.....(I said a little regretful, I really don't want to get Mikel into any trouble because of a dress)

Security woman: that is the point my dear,!!, We've already told him to return your dress, but he still insisted on taking it,.. Soo... that's why you need to fill this form,.....(she said, sounding so serious)

Caira: ok ma'am,....I said collecting the form

I finished filling the form and submitted the form to her.

there was a lot of crazy questions in the form, particularly on my personal information, after I submitted the form, the woman took a photograph of me and I was asked to sign, I really hoped that

this doesn't spoil mikel's image.....

Few minutes later, I saw the security woman coming with a document

Security woman: miss caira Hudson, am Soo sorry to say this, but I just want to inform you that" your patronage are no longer needed here..."YOU HAVE BEEN BANND FROM BUYING ANYTHING IN THIS MALL" Meaning that; NO MATTER HOW MUCH YOU ARE WILLING TO PAY FOR A DRESS AT THIS MALL, YOU WOULD NOT BE ALLOWED IN" therefore, you shouldn't be seen around this mall.

caira's POV

I was Soo shocked when she said those words, Soo all this while, it had never been a complaint form but an expulsion form.

...me and mum were asked to leave the mall,..

this Mikel Guy was really Soo heartless, I couldn't believe that he Banned me from shopping at this

mall.

Mrs Elena: darling let's just check out another shopping mall.

Caira:no mum, I think we've had enough embarrassment for a day

Mikel's POV

Zack and mikel drove out of the shopping mall, for a while they weren't saying anything to each other.

kindly hi novelsrepublic on WhatsApp on plus two three four eight zero five five eight eight nine one right three to get added to the novels group

Zack: Mikel, don't you think you went too far, I mean....you could have done anything but not banning her from shopping.....that was completely outrageous.

Mikel:so, what did you expect me to do to her?

Zack: probably throw her out or something.... Zack answered with a shrug.

Mikel: as far as I am concerned Zack, this is just the a lesser punishment compared to the nature of my punishment,

normally, if it was for any other days, she would have been probably cooling her @ss in jail by now, but I don't know why I spared her.

Zack: probably because she's cute and hot.....Zack said with a smirk.

But Mikel scoffed and said,

Mikel: do you really think I care about how pretty she is before putting her in her place, I have delt with a lot of girls, way more prettier than her, Soo she shouldn't be an exemption, I guess I was just in a good mood today.....

Zack: I don't really.....

Mikel: zack would you please change that topic

already!!..... (Mikel cut in)

While zack laughed out loud.

Few days later

Caira's POV

The morning clock rang out loudly awaking me from my sleep, I rested up sluggishly, then lay back on my bed to rest,

few minutes later I heard my door flung open, it was my mum

Caira: good morning mum,..... . (I said tiredly.)

Mrs Elena: caira are you still sleeping, today is your first day at high school and this is 6:30 am!!!

Caira: oh my God!!I said and flung up to my feet immediately, I stripped naked regardless of my mum's presence and ran to the bathroom. In no time I was done with bathing, I brushed my teeth,

my hair and put on a casual dress. I didn't bother putting on makeup because I was not the makeup type, I wore my new sneakers, took my backpack and left for the sitting room. When I got to the sitting room, breakfast was already served.

Mrs Elena: darling you are done so fast??.... She asked looking surprised

Caira: yes mum sorry I wouldn't be able to sit for breakfast, I am running late, I'll just eat when I'm back.

Mrs Elena: why the rush dear, I made your favourite, bacon and egg, and this is just 7 a.m. so you still got extra 30 minutes.

Caira: bye mum.....I said and gave her a peck, ignoring what she said.

Mum: alright dear, can I at least give you a ride??

Caira: okay mum, I'll be waiting outside....(I said going out)

My mum dropped me off at school..and I proceeded to the school management office to obtain my text book, school ID card, uniform and other necessary material that they offered to give me for Free..

It was not an easy process to get pass the school gate, I was asked a lot of scrutinizing questions and also had to provide my scholarship letter, when I got into the school I was Soo amazed by the sight in front of me, the school was Soo beautiful, there was carved sculpture of Dr. Camford (Mikel's Dad) the school was beyond beautiful, there was a lot of student, looking Soo classy and richly dressed,....gosh I don't think this is a place for someone like me (I said inside me)

I was was led to the school management office by a junior student, when I got to the school management office, I knocked gently and was ushered in by a feminine voice, I walked in and saw

a beautiful young lady who was probably in her late 30's seating behind a desk which contained Soo many papers and folder, I guessed that she must be the appointee in charge of enrolling newly admitted students.

there was a name tag on her jacket with an inscription "Dany Flora"... So I guessed that must be her name.

She welcomed me with a very friendly smile.

Caira: good morning ma'am

Miss Dany: thank you dear, please have a seat.

Caira: thank you ma'am....I said taking my seat

Miss Dany: what's your name young lady and how can I help you.....she said, her eyes fixed on what she was typing.

Caira: I am one of the beneficiary of this month scholarship, and I was asked to resume school today.

Miss Dany: okay dear Soo what's your name dear.

In no time I was done with the school management office, I was given a laptop, school uniform, ID card, admission number, seat number and other necessary documents And was led to grade 12 which Miss Dany said was my grade.....

As I walked along the hall way I kept admiring everything within the school, until I got to grade 12.....

When I got to grade 12, I stood at the door for some seconds, I was so nervous to enter, I prayed silently within me and finally decided to enter, when I got inside the class room, all eyes were on me, some were whispering among them selves, some guys were winking, while some just stared on.

My seat number was 025, so I walked timidly to my seat, and sat down gently.

After few minutes of waiting, a teacher finally walked into the classroom, we all stood up and greeted in unison, she introduced her self as Mrs. Jenny and also made my presence known to everyone.

Mrs Jenny: good morning class, I would like to inform you all that there is a new student in our midst, Soo I would like her to introduce her self in front of everyone, please try to be nice for once.....

she opened a small folder containing the list of newly admitted students and my name was the first on the list

Mrs Jenny: miss caira Hudson, please come out and introduce yourself,.....she said reading through the folder,

I walked out timidly, all eyes were on me, I just pray I don't trip while walking....I got in front of the class and was about speaking when everyone suddenly got distracted....

Students: oh my gosh!!! Mikel is in school today

Mrs Jenny: everyone please settle down!!!.

(The class got disorganized and noisy as the students murmured about the presence of Mikel)

Caira: for a while, I was Soo confused when I saw Mikel walking towards our classroom, was it possible that we were in the same grades....God please let it not be what i am thinking (I prayed silently within me)

TBC

..

...

my better half

(High school crush)💔

By authoress prudence🖋️

Episode 10

the J-3 girls

We were sitting few distance away from the newbie at the canteen,

Jenny: gosh!! Jane, don't you think that new girl is just Soo cute.....(she said probably watching in admiration)

Jane: seriously Jenny??(she asked in disgust) do you really think that girl can meet up to our standards?? Just take a look at her,(she said pointing at caira) her hair is of low quality and her sneakers looks Soo cheap.....she doesn't even look expensive to me (she concluded with a look of irritation).

Jenny: yeah, but I think we should make her one of us, what do you think Janelle??

Janelle's POV

I was listening the whole time as my both friends argue, i wasn't really interested in what they were saying because I am used to their non-stop

argument about everything, sometimes, their discussion makes me sick and feel like doing away with them, but I still love them, we have been friends right from middle school, we have always been there for each other, we protect our interest, watch out for each other and always get what we want, and trust wasn't an issue because we have never betrayed each other.

we were popularly known in school as the j-3 girls, I have always been the leader/Queen of the gang because I am prettier, smarter, richer and better than them in everything and I am not ready to bring in any other b*tch into the team.

Jenny: hello sweetie, what are you thinking about,.....we are asking for your opinion (she said, waving her fingers at Janelle's face and also with an eye roll)

Janelle: no!!, I am not bringing in any other member into the team!! I don't know, but I feel like

that newbie might be a problem to us (she said, looking at caira intensely)

While we were still watching, we saw Jason (Jane's boyfriend) walk up to the newbie and sat with her, Immediately, Jane got alarmed as her eyes widened in surprise and anger

Jenny: Jane, isn't that your boyfriend...?? (Jenny said pointing towards Jason)

(For a while, Jane wasn't saying anything,)

Jenny: what do you think they are discussing that is making the newbie smile Soo much.??..it must be something really interesting, right Jane?? (She asked as a smirk appeared at the corner of her lips)

Jane stood up with an unimaginable force and was about walking up to caira, when Janelle intervened,

Janelle: calm down girl (she said, holding her arm).

Let's just watch the show, when she's done, we'll

deal with her together (she said, as she smirked)

We watched fervently, as Jason handed over a piece of paper to her, probably his complimentary card, Jenny was putting on a bitter look as she watched,.....

Caira's POV

I finished taking my coffee and was on my way going back to class when a girl stumble into me, followed by two other girls, they stood in front of me, hindering me from going further. Their appearance in front of me didn't seem to be a coincidence, it was obvious that they had something to say, Soo I also stopped to listen....

Janelle: hey beautiful!(one of them said smirking,)

Caira: uhmm..... hello? (I answered really confused)

Janelle: we are not here to talk sh*t with you,
Soo...tell me, do you really know the guy you were

chatting with at the canteen??

Caira: I.... don't really know, but he introduced himself as Jason and he also claimed to.....

Janelle:(she was still speaking when i cut in rudely)...I just want to give you a sound warning, that guy is my friend's boyfriend, Soo I would advise you to stay really far away from him if you want to enjoy your stay in this school,....don't you dare mess with the j-3 girls.(She said with a very serious look)

Caira: he was just.....

Jane: shut up darling, and handover whatever he gave to you.(She said with her right hand stretched out).

Caira:..(I quietly handed over the invitation card which was given to me by Jason)

Jenny: is this all??(There was a look of dissatisfaction on her face as she spoke)

Caira:yes.... that's all,(I said timidly)

Caira's POV

After everything,I finally got to class.....

after all the humiliation and intimidation, they finally decided to release me.

those girls were really something else

↑ ♀they even took the invitation that Jason gave to me.....

Shortly afterwards, a female teacher entered, she introduced herself as miss Bianca.

Miss Bianca: hello class, like you all know, I am your head teacher and I'm in charge of all activities of grade 12but before we start any lecture, I would like to inform you all that there was an information passed to me by the school authority,.....I was instructed to coordinate y'all as you pick your new study partner today.....

there is a bowl containing folded pieces of papers with some student's name on it, some set of students are to pick any paper of their choice and open it,....any name they find on the paper would be their study partner through out this semester....

Instruction 1 : you are to pick only one paper, and the class will be shared equally, (the ones who would do the picking, and the ones who sit and listen for their names)

Instruction 2: you are not to change/ swap your study partner.

Instruction 3: you and your study partner are to work hand in hand in order to succeed this semester, you are both responsible for each other's mistake,.Soo during the class exercise Don't let your study partner make a costly mistake that would affect the both of you....

. You and your study partner are going to be embarking on Soo many practicals, field trips and

camping *TOGETHER* (she placed emphasis on the last word) please have it in mind that you may not like your study partner, but you just need to get along with him/her if at all you want to graduate high school.

Caira's POV

The picking process started, the class was divided into equal half, but unfortunately I was not among the students who do the picking, I was among the benched student, who sat down anxiously awaiting their names,.....I don't actually have anyone in mind, but I just hope I get merged with a serious person....

Jason was the first person to pick, when he opened the piece of paper, a mischievous smile formed on his face

Miss Bianca: Jason, can I have your paper please

...(Jason quietly handed over the piece of paper to miss Bianca)

Miss Bianca: Jason picked jane, (Jane's face brightened up immediately, she was visibly blushing)

The next person was senorita, but when she opened the paper, her face crumbled, it was obvious that she didn't like the person she picked.

Miss Bianca: Lewis, you have been merged with senorita (Lewis face also crumpled in anger)

.....the process went on till it finally reached Mikel's turn,.....Mikel walked boldly to the front of the class, I watched him in admiration, i don't know why everything he does seems Soo perfect in my sight.

He dipped his hands in the bowl and picked up a piece of paper, he opened it but there was a blank

expression on his face as he looked at the name on the piece of paper, all the girls were probably anxious as they waited impatiently to know the lucky girl who is getting merged with mikel..

Miss Bianca: ...(she collected Mikel's paper and read through it.)....caira Hudson, you've been merged with mikel....

TBC..

... Can mikel and caira work together during practical and school camping ??

My better half

High school crush💕💕

Episode 11

Caira's POV

There was a loud gasp by everyone Immediately she said that..... I also felt like my heart skipped a beat when I heard my name...oh my gosh !!! Why

Mikel?? How am I going to cope with him through out this semester?.....firstly, I had to share the same class room with Mikel, and now, I am stuck with him through out my remaining years in school and my success and guarantee on leaving high school depends on him!!...oh sh*t!!! He is definitely gonna recognize me this time around

The remaining picking process was so boring and in no time, we were done

Mrs Bianca: congratulations class!! now that everyone now has a study partner, you can now proceed with the required arrangements with your study partner, because there would be a chemistry practical next week, which is compulsory for anyone who wants to pass Mr Jones chemistry class, Soo I would advise y'all to start a combine reading or experimental practical quiz, in order for you both not to mess up on the

main practicals or presentations,
after school hours, you can all locate your study partners and make arrangements for your location/times of study, which would be decided by the person who did the picking.

In no time we were done with class for that day, everyone went to their various study partner, but I was the only one who couldn't approach mine, I was Soo scared to approach him, and he didn't even cared to meet me or know about my opinion about the upcoming practical, in my own opinion, I think he cared less because his father was the CEO of this school and whether he pass or not, it doesn't really matters, he is still going to college,...but I really needed to talk to him, because this was my only way to go to college, but I don't know how to face him.....

..later An idea came popping into mind,

I think I should just write down my request on a piece of paper and hand it over to mikel's nice friend, since he looks much more approachable than Mikel, I quickly scribbled some words into a piece of paper, I was still writing when I saw Zack walking towards Mikel's car,.. so I ran to catch up with him before he goes home

Caira: uhmm..... hello (I said timidly)

Zack: oh.....hi beautiful !!, What's up??(He said turning to face me)

Caira: sorry for taking your time but I just want you to help me deliver this letter to your friend Mikel, just tell him that the letter is from his new study partner

Zack: alright....

.but I think you look familiar, have we met before??(He said, looking at me intensely)

(I felt my heart thumping really fast Immediately

he said that, oh God!!, I really need to leave before he recognizes me)

Caira: uhmm...no, no,I don't think you know me .. I mean, we've never met before, right ?(I said stammering nervously)...I guess I will just get going.

Janelle's POV

Janelle: I really can't believe that I was merged with that dummy called Tony, while that b*tch was merged with Mikel (I said angrily)

Jane: I always knew that that girl was up to no good

Jenny: so what are you planning to do now

Janelle: I think I need to see Mrs Bianca, I am ready to pay any price so I can be merged with Mikel, I can't let any b*tch take my place, because this is the only way that I can get closer to Mikel and make him fall in love with me.

Jane: alright dear, but you better do that snappy

before the upcoming practical.

Jenny: Soo what's up jane....are you and Jason really preparing for the upcoming practical or

Jane: not really sweetie, I and Jason have agreed to be meeting at his place every evening around 7:30pm–11:00pm

Jenny: jezz girl !!!, Isn't it way too late to meet for studies by that time??...and why the hell are you both meeting at his place, you could probably meet in the school library by

8:00am–11:00am,.....for Christ sake, he should be your study partner and not your s*x partner.

Jane: (Jane laughed at loud while Jenny watched in confusion) you must be joking if you really think I and Jason are just gonna be study partners till the end of this semester, this is a golden opportunity which I can't let go.....I now have more than enough excuse to hangout with Jason and come back anytime I feel like, without my dad

questioning me about my where about.(Jane said excitedly)

Jenny: I really think this whole thing is.....(Jenny was still talking when Jane cut her off nicely)

Jane: Jenny, I really think you're taking this whole thing too personal because you don't have a boyfriend

Jenny: (she gasp out loud) Jenny did you just said that to me !!!

(Jenny hit Jane with a pillow, while the both girls fought playfully like kids)

Zack's POV

I and Mikel were both in the car talking when I suddenly remembered that I was having an undelivered message from that caira girl

Zack: that reminds me Mikel, there is a message for you, the letter is from your new study partner (I

said handing over the letter to him)

Mikel: what's it all about (he asked, staring at the piece of paper intensely)

Zack: probably, a love letter (I answered jokingly)

Mikel opened the letter and read quietly, I was about asking him what the letter was all about, but I just decided to mind my business

Caira's POV

I got home and laid down tiredly on the sofa, I was Soo exhausted....I still couldn't believe that I got merged with Mikel, I couldn't even understand how I felt about it, I don't know how I would be able to cope with that rich spoilt brat called Mikel,...I really need to start learning how to tolerate this guy, if we are really gonna work as a team...but come to think of it,.. I'll be able to see his handsome face every day....

(I giggled softly, picking up my phone to call

Kaylee)

Janelle's POV

I stood in front of her door as I pushed the door bell,.....

I heard her voice in response..,

While waiting patiently for her to open The door, I decided to feed my eyes for a while,....her apartment was really small and needed reconstruction, I am pretty sure that she would accept my offer..... Of cause,!! no human being in her condition would decline such a huge offer all in the name of sincerity...

After few seconds of waiting, she finally opened the door,.....

When she saw me, there was confusion written all over her face, she was probably imagining what could bring the almighty Janelle Smith to her dirty apartment....but she finally found her voice...

Mrs Bianca: Janelle what brings you here

Janelle: can I at least come in??

Mrs Bianca: forgive my manners dear, please come in.....(she said ushering me in)

When we got inside the sitting room, I sat down on her sofa.....the room was quite small but it was clean and we'll organized.

Mrs Bianca: Soo my dear, what can I offer you

Janelle: nothing ma'am, I am not here to visit nor waste your precious time,.....I am here to strike a deal with you.....(I said with a smirk)

My better half

(high school crush)

By authoress prudence ....

Don't copy or repost

★episode 9★

Caira's POV

I felt my heart beating Soo loud like a party drum as he approached the classroom corridor, oh my God!!, I was such a fool to drag a dress with him, what if he recognizes me and also kick me out from school the same way he did at the mall??.... God I just started this school, I can't be expelled because of my ignorance.....

There was an aura of authority in him as he walked, I also recognized the guy behind him, that was the same person he was with at the mall, as he stepped into the classroom, there was noises of joy and celebration from everyone, I found myself asking, "who the hell is this guy, And why are they murmuring just because of his presence at school??"

Jason's POV

I watched admiringly as she stood in front the class, she looked Soo beautiful and hot, I just can't wait to get inside of her when she was called to introduce her self to the class, I watched carefully

from behind as she swayed her big hips to the front of the class, I found my self lusting after her, she got such beautiful eyes and hot body that could turn anyone on. If I could just have her for one night.....I will be fulfilled, But I think I know just what to do.....

Mikel's POV

I walked into classroom with zack behind me, the noise was just unbearable Soo I had to put on my headphone, as I walked into the classroom I saw someone that caught my attention, she looked Soo familiar...it was the lady from the mall!! Wow, I never knew we were in the same school,.... anyways, this is gonna be interesting..... (I said with a smirk)

I walked into the class and took my seat while everyone kept staring like they've seen a ghost. Shortly afterwards, Mrs Jenny walked to my seat and said...

Mrs Jenny: welcome back Mikel, I hope you will be stable this semester because you are in your final grade and your attendance really matters, this semester, we're going to be embarking Soo many field trips, wildlife camping and practical, so you need to be present if at all you wanna graduate high school.....(she concluded with a smile)

Mikel: thank you for your concern ma'am, but I don't think me graduating highschool should be anybody's problem, Soo I think you should mind your business if you still find your job useful

Mrs Jenny: Mikel camford you need to start.....

Mikel: can we just get on with what we have for today? (I cut in).....

Mrs Jenny walked away from my seat looking quite offended, well I don't really care. This lady really needs to learn how to start minding her business.

Mrs Jenny: alright can the new student now

proceed.....she said walking to girl standing in front of the class

Caira's POV

I stood in front of the class almost shaking as I introduced myself, I announced my name and other information they need to know about me and then I proceeded back to my seat,.....when I got to my seat m, I found Mikel seating not far away from me, his seat number was 026, he was also staring at me intensely, I felt my heart beating really fast, could it be that he is trying to recognize me?

I sat backing him, so he won't see my face

Mikel's POV

When she mentioned that her name was caira Hudson, I felt like I've heard that name somewhere but I couldn't remember where.

Caira's POV

It was time for lunch break, So... I decided to To take a walk around the school, ..

I admired every thing around me as I walked around the school, I still couldn't believe that I was in my dream school, I saw a beautiful building with students and opaque glass, I could clearly see students eating inside the building, that must be the student's canteen,(I thought) I was already feeling a little hungry, so I went into the canteen, Mrs Dany had earlier told me that lunch is free for every student, so I walked to an empty table and took my seat, not long after I took my seat, a canteen attendant came running towards me....

Canteen attendant: miss, please can I take your order. She said handing me a food menu....

There was a list of Soo many interesting meals, Soo I finally settled for a cup of coffee and fish,.....
God is this what being in camford high school feels

like?? The students are being treated like royalties, I feel like never leaving high school, (I said and giggled).....I was still seating alone when one of the male students in my grade walked up to me...

Jason: Hi beautiful !!

Caira: hello.....(I responded a bit nervous).

Jason: can I please take a sit next to you??

Caira: sure...

Jason: I'm Jason, so....do you mind telling me your name.

Caira: I'm caira.

Jason:I would really like us to be friends, I hope you're cool with that?

Caira: okay..

Jason: alright dear, since we are now officially friends, you are invited to my house warming party.....(He said handing me an invitation card)

...I took the card and read through it, it was an invitation letter for a house warming party,

Caira: thank you Soo much for your invite, but I don't really attend parties,.....(I said handing his invitation card back to him).... there was an expression of disappointment immediately I turned down his invite

Jason: why dear?, It's gonna be fun, and you know you are a new student Soo, you really need to socialize with others in order to make friends.

Caira: i... don't really know if I can make it...

Jason: why don't you think you can make it to my party, or you don't trust me??

Caira: no, that's not what I meant.... okay, I will try to be there.....(I said, giving up at last)

Jason alright dear, I'll just see you there.....,(He said with a wink, as he stood up and left, leaving the invitation card on my table)....

Not long after he left, the canteen attendant came with my cup of coffee.

↑ ♂ Jason's POV ↑ ♂

I smirked in victory immediately I left her table...."NOW LET THE GAME BEGIN"

TBC

..

..

..

My better half

(High school crush)

Episode 12

At the camford's mansion

Mikel's POV

Zoey: oh!! My gosh.....Mikel.. you're really killing me,.....slowly please, ohh!! (Zoey moaned out

in pleasure as Mikel drilled her @ss real bad)

They were both in mikel's room, the sound of the music in mikel's room was Soo high, enough to prevent Zoey's loud moans from reaching the sitting room....not that anyone really cares about him having s*x in his room, but just to make sure Zoey doesn't disturb any one's peace with her loud moans, which really annoys Mikel

Mikel: this girl really needs to be taught how to moan, she shouts like a pregnant woman in labor, which really annoys me (Mikel said inside him)

Zoey: slowly Mikel,.....oh my goodness !!!.....(Zoey screamed in ecstasy unconsciously as Mikel f*cked her had through her @ss hole) ... Mikel...don't ..stop!! (Unfortunately, their fun was interrupted when they suddenly heard the door flung open, they both jumped up in an hyper speed, just to see mikel's sister, Dianna standing at the door)

Dianna: oppps !!!...(She said, laughing nervously),

uhmm...mum wants to see you down stairs (she said, but Mikel stared at her angrily, he was probably going to ask her out)

Dianna: uhmm..... I'll just get going then, (she said, closing the door)

Immediately Dianna left, Mikel stood up and left Zoey on the bed.

Zoey: Mikel !!, Are you leaving..??(Zoey asked, feeling Soo confused)

Mikel: you can leave Zoey (Mikel stated coldly)

Zoey: but I'm not satisfied yet.....

Mikel: seriously?? Do you ever get satisfied?

..... Zoey stood up, removing the duvet that was covering her body, making her stark naked.....she walked to Mikel and stood in front of him, making sure that he gets a better view of her plummy boobs, but mikel walked past her like he wasn't interested in her.

Mikel's POV

I walked out of the room, leaving Zoey on the bed, I proceeded to the sitting room to know what mum had important to say, when I got to the sitting room, I sighted her and Dianna sitting and watching a movie, they turned off the TV immediately I took my seat.

Mikel: you sent for me mum?

Mrs camford: I just want to inform you both that your dad will be coming back home tomorrow, and he would permanently be home with us, he won't be residing in China again, because he has found a suitable assistant manager to run his companies in his absence, he is now coming over to Korea, to manage the camford high schoolers academy !!!.. isn't that great news?(She asked looking really excited)

Dianna: I don't think that's a good news mum (she answered frowning)

Mrs camford: really?, Is that what you have to say?
Mikel what do you have to say??

Mikel: I rather not say anything mum,....dad is free to come over....but if you don't mind, I am having a very important photo shoot in 2 hours, and I will like you to excuse me,

..... I walked away, leaving mum and Dianna in the sitting room, I don't think I like the idea of my dad coming back home to run my school, I really have been enjoying dad's absence until nowbut don't get me wrong, I don't hate my dad, but I just prefer him to be away from me for some while, I feel like his presence at home and in school is gonna restrict me from Soo many things.....I smell trouble coming.

* Zoey's POV*

I sat on Fifi's bed crying, I took a one day off from the camford mansion, to cool down my head for a while, I don't like Mikel's new attitude towards me.

Fifi: c'mon sweetie, stop drinking,(she said, snatching the bottle of alcohol from my hands)

Zoey: no Fifi, just let me be,. I've made a lot of sacrifices for mikel and he still doesn't care,....do you know what it took me to get a job as a secretary at the camford mansion??.....when I first saw mikel's picture on a cosmopolitan magazine,I fell in love with him, I promised myself that I would date him at all cost,....but I needed a very good opportunity to live with the camford, I thought of schooling in mikel's school, but I was already done with high school,...

. fortunately for me, I came across a vacancy for the post of a secretary at the camford mansion, It took me a lot of effort to convince my dad to get me a job at the camford's mansion.....with my dad's high connections, I was able purchase a fake college CV and get a job as a permanent secretary at the camford's mansion,... I was Soo excited

when i was given the opportunity to stay permanently at the mansion, which was what I always wanted.

I could have probably been in college by now, but I chose to work for mikel,...just take a good look at me Fifi, I am the daughter of a multi billionaire, but I am working for Mikel all in the name of love.....I left all the wealth and royal treatment I my dad's mansion, just to chase after a heartless guy.(She said, amidst tears)

Fifi: I understand your situation Zoey, but I'll advise you to let go of mikel Soo you won't lose both Mikel and your future at the end..... Mikel is 19 and you're 22, I don't think it's proper to date an underage guy, ...and Mikel is nothing but a playboy, he doesn't have the heart to love any girl, he would only end up breaking your heart.. just find your self a matured guy who loves and cherish you.

Zoey: I've gone a long way Fifi, I can't back out now,

I must make sure that mikel fall in love with me,
and any b*tch who comes in between us, wil pay
dearly!!!(Zoey concluded angrily)

The next day

At the camford's mansion

Mr camford car packed in front of the house, his
wife and daughter came to welcome him happily

Mr camford: it's Soo good to be finally home
honey,(he said, entering the house)

Mrs camford: yes dear, I and the kids missed you
Soo much (she answered calmly)

Mr camford: speaking of the kids, where is mikel
and why isn't he here to welcome me?

Dianna: he should be in his room,.... he is not
feeling too well..(she said, covering up for her
brother)

....Mr camford walked straight to mikel's room and opened the door....., he caught Mikel playing a video game on his phone

Mr camford: Mikel, I can see the reason why you can't come and welcome me,.....you are too busy with your b*tches online...(He said, standing in front of mikel)

Mikel: welcome home dad.(Mikel said perfunctorily)

Mr camford: while I was in China, your teacher told me that you hardly ever come to school and you have never participated in any class activities, how true is that??

.....Mikel kept quiet, starring directly at his father.

Mr camford: well, I am fully home now, and as long as I am your father and the CEO of your school, I would make sure you become responsible or you don't get to graduate highschool, trust me Mikel, I

did that to your brother,...so...it won't cost me more than a phone call, to do the same to you....(Mikels dad concluded with a Stern look.)

....

... TBC

Zoey's true identity have been revealed

my better half

(Highschool crush)

By authoress prudence....

Episode 13

Janelle's POV

Anger alone couldn't explain how I feel right now, I still couldn't believe that that wretched old lady declined my offer, i offered her \$5,000 just to remove caira and merge me with Mikel, but she declined, all in the name of a dumb school arrangements,....I really don't know what to do

next,...

Jane: Janelle, I think you shouldn't let this caira girl be your problem, right now, what you need to do is to find another way to get close to Mikel

Janelle: what other way do you think I can get close to him,....I tried chatting him up, but he isn't responding....I asked him for his number and he snubbed me,.....no one in school has his number except his best friend Zack and his sisterI tried talking to Zack about Mikel's phone number, but he said he can't give me Mikel's number without his permission.....and i can't get my self to talk to his sister, because she is Soo bitchy and wouldn't hesitate to embarrass me.....

Jane: well, if you really love Mikel Soo much,....then I think you should get close to his sister.

Janelle: and how can getting close to Dianna help me win Mikel's heart??(She asked in anger)

Jane: well,...if you can get close to Mikel's sister,...she might invite you over to the house, and probably introduce you to her brother.....all you need to do is to get close to Dianna and tell her you love her brother and would love to date him.

Janelle: you know Jane?.... This is the most reasonable idea you've ever brought up, ever since I know you (Janelle said teasingly)

Jane: I'll just take that as a thank you (Jane said, and the both girls bursted out into laughter)

Jason's POV

Lucas: dude that was Soo smart!!!(Lucas said excitedly)

Fred: dude tommorow night is gonna be the best!!

Jason: yeah, I've already arranged for the wine, the sleeping pills and other necessary things, I would be calling her to be sure she is coming, I just can't wait to get inside her....she is sure gonna taste

good ...

Jimmy: hold on dude, what do you mean by "YOU CAN'T WAIT",do you really think we would help you with all the arrangements and wouldn't get the chance to have our own share of her body??(Jimmy asked, looking really serious)

Jason: that's no big deal Jimmy,.....I'll go first, then you, Lucas, Conrad and Fred

Fred: hold on Jason (Fred cut in, interrupting Jason).....why the hell am I the last??.....I mean,....what if she pass out or dies in the process??(Fred asked, with his both hands spread apart)

Jason: don't worry Fred, we are all gonna go in for just 10 minutes each, Soo she wouldn't pass out when it's your turn..... I'll have to see her, to make sure that she is really attending the party

Fred: are you inviting that son of a b*tch Mikel??

Jimmy: Fred, I told you not to mention that name again,.....his name sucks!!!(Jimmy said angrily)

Jason: yes Fred, I invited Mikel over.

Lucas: dude, why would you invite Mikel,...he is our biggest enemy, and I can't bear to see his annoying face at our party !!!

Jason: don't worry guys, I have a big package for him.(He said with a smirk)

Lucas: and what's that big package??

Jason: after we are done with caira,....if we can also succeed in drugging Mikel's drink, we can just lock the both of them together to make it look like Mikel raped her.....and whatever happens to her the next day, is up to Mikel,.....if she dies, Mikel will be held responsible and even if she doesn't die,.....I'll make sure the press are there before they both wakeup..... Mikel might not be penalized by the law, but his image will be tarnished and he

would never be able to show his shameful face on TV again...(Jason concluded with a smirk)

Caira's POV

Kylee and I were in my room, it's been a while since we spoke,.. ever since I started highschool, I've not been able to see her nor tell her about my progress, the last time we met was in the ballet class,..I was telling her about my encounter with mikel while she listened in surprise

Kylee: hold on caira, you mean that you and Mikel are in the same grade, and you are both going to be working together till you graduate??.... (She asked, looking really surprised)

Caira: yes Kylee, and I don't know what to do...!!

Kylee: do about what ??..... isn't that awesome !!!, ...you and your celebrity crush in the same grade..!!
Oh my goodness, I wish I was the one in your shoes, I will definitely make good use of this golden

opportunity.....be smart baby girl, and don't let this opportunity slip through your fingers, make good use of it !!!...(She said, sounding damn serious)

Caira: and how do you think I should make good use of it, do you expect me to beg him for cash, or what?

Kylee: no sweetie, you've got what it takes, "SEDUCE HIM, AND MAKE HIM FALL IN LOVE WITH YOU", with all these qualities, you are capable of luring any guy to bed !!

....I laughed out loud immediately Kylee said that,...

Caira: you know that is impossible Kylee, Mikel is a playboy....he doesn't have the heart to love, Soo that would be a waste of time (I said amidst laughter)..

....I and Kylee were still talking when my phone rang, it was Jason..... goodness!!!, I was Soo

confused,...I didn't know if I should take the call or ignore....I really do not want any more trouble from any stranger....

My phone rang for the second time and this time, I just had to pick up the phone...

Jason: hey dear!!(He said over the phone)

Caira: hey Jason!!,

Jason: how was your day sweetie??

Caira: it was fine,...i don't mean to sound rude .but please can you stop calling me??, (I didn't realize when I said that, but by the time I realized, it was already too late)

Jason: why..??, Have I done anything wrong??

Caira: no, no!! Jason, you have not done anything wrong.(I answered feeling guilty)....I have my reasons..... trust me Jason.

Jason: is it because of my girlfriend

Caira: uhmm.... Not exactly...I don't even know who your girlfriend is (I lied)

Jason: okay, I promise to stop bothering you, for you own safety, because my girlfriend can be a little bit crazy some times.....but only on one condition.

Caira: okay, and what's that condition??(I asked, feeling Soo relieved)

Jason: if you can come for my house warming party tommorow evening.

Caira: is that all??

Jason: yes honey.

Caira: Then consider it done.....but please send the address to me because I think I've lost the invitation card you gave to me.

Jason: alright dear!!, See you tomorrow.... please don't disappoint me.

Caira: I won't... thanks for calling, bye(I answered as I ended the call quickly)

Kylee: what party are you going for tommorow without me??(She said, pouting)

Caira: uhmm..... a friend's house warming party by 7:00–9:00 pm

Kylee: caira,!! Isn't it way too late to go for a party at such time??(She asked alarmed)

Caira: no mum (I said sarcastically), yesterday was my first day at high School, and I've already made a friend (Jason) to the extent that I'm being invited for a party.(I said proudly)....

And also,I really need to attend, Soo...he can leave my f*cking life alone

.....

Jason's POV

Immediately I ended the call, I went down stairs to

inform the boys of her reply

Jason: guess what guys??? (I asked happily)

Lucas: she accepted to come over??

Jason: if course dummy!! (I said happily)

.....I brought out a bottle of wine and shared it among ourselves.

Jason: cheers to our victory guys.....(He said, happily, raising a glass of wine, and they all responded "cheers" in unison)

TBC

..

I don't understand what is going on here, what are they celebrating?

. My better half

(Highschool crush)

Episode 15

By authoress prudence

Caira's POV

Caira: ahhh!!!! !!!!!!!!!!!

I tried opening the door, but it was locked....my scream seemed to have effect on him as he also woke up.

Caira: what the hell did you do to me!!!(I asked shocked)

Mikel: what the hell are you doing in my car? (He asked looking surprised)

...I began touching myself crazily to know if I can feel any pain, but I couldn't feel anything,...no part of my body hurts except my head,...but how did I get into his car, why am I on bikinis and why do I feel like something happened ??...I couldn't remember anything, the last thing I remembered was being carried by Jason,.. I don't even know how I slept for Soo long, could it be possible that i

was drugged??

Caira: please tell me what happened (I said, with a teary eyes)

Mikel: I am mikel camford, I dont take advantage of any lady,they submit to me , (he stated coldly)...now leave my car.

.....i was about going out when I suddenly realized that I was still on bikinis

caira: okay, where are my clothes please(I asked looking down, but he was silent and just kept staring at me, which made me feel really nervous,i quickly turned my face to avoid eye contact and i was also about to leave when he finally spoke out)

mikel: wait!!,...

he took off his long T-shirt and handed it over to me,.....for a while, I was confused and didn't know If I was to collect the shirt or not, so, I kept

staring at the shirt confusedly ,...but he slowly reached for my shoulders and hanged the T-shirt on my shoulder, using it to cover my whole body properly, I felt my entire body shivering when he did so.....

, I raised my head to have a look at him, but my eyes eventually locked with his, I found my self staring back at him, he brought his face closer to my neck, i felt my heart beating soo fast as I felt his warm breath on my neck, then he whispered softly “YOU SHOULD BE GREATFUL I SAVED YOUR ASS AND YOU SHOULD REALLY STAY FAR AWAY FROM JASON, IF YOU WANT TO SURVIVE HIGH SCHOOL, HE’S NOT WHAT YOU THINK HE IS. NOW GET OUT!!....(he ended rudely)

.....i immediately turned and stepped out of the car....i couldn't even recognise where I was,

I was in the middle of nowhere,..... I really needed to get out of here because it looks unsafe

and dreadful.

luckily I was able to find a path that led to the road, so, .. I took a cab back home,.....when I got home, i knocked on the door severally but there was no response, I walked gradually to the window to peep if mum was around and i found her lying on the couch, I went back to the door and knocked once again , this time more louder,,... who's at the door??....mum asked from inside it's me,caira.....i answered feeling really guilty.....i know she must have been really worried mum :oh my ggoodness caira!!! she answered and rushed to open the door,..... immediately she saw me,she hugged me tightly,stroking my hair gently.. Mum: honey where have you been through out the night, you got me really worried, you know??.....(she said breaking up the hug) Caira:mum, I'm soo sorry I got you worried, I was

fine

mum; ,you could have just call me to inform me that you were spending the night at noah's place,.....(she asked looking really worried) I tried calling you all night but you weren't reachable

caira; yeah,....my battery was.....uhmm....low....and (I suddenly remembered that I left my phone and purse at the party, shit!!) and, I think I misplaced my phone on my way going to see noah....(I lied)

mum; okay dear,..but you look really terrible, and by the way, what happened to the beautiful dress you left home with??....(she asked with a serious look)

caira: uhmm.....it got stained....so....noah gave me his shirt to put on...(I lied again, while mum kept nodding her head in accordance)

mum: oh!!...okay then,..you must be really tired,..you can go have a shower and rest,..your meal will be ready in 10 minutes.....she said,giving me a light peck on my forehead and going to the kitchen.

I went upstairs and lay down on my bed,..... soo much lies for a day, (I said within me),....what mikel told me, kept resounding continuously in my head, (jason isn't what you think he is)...i dont even know what happened to me, I dont think mikel will ever do anything as terrible as taking advantage of any girl, not even me, but what did he even meant when he said "he saved my ass"?? how did I find my self in his car all of a sudden??..what happened next when jason said he was taking me to somewhere safe??..and how did i even got drunk at the first place??..because i don't believe that a cup of lemonade is enough to make me drunk,could it be possible that jason added something to my drink??...and even if he did,

what was his aim of doing that??....there was soo many questions running through my mind at the moment,gosh!!!,i think i really need to be carefull with everyone in camford's high school, including mikel....jason have a lot of questions to answer tommorrow !!!!.....but i need to purchase an after sex pill just for safety purpose.

..i stood up from my bed and went to my wardrobe to change my outfit, ..i took off mikel's shirt and smiled.... i found my self sniffing his shirt, his fragrance was still all over it..... i couldn't believe that i was holding mikel's shirt, what an honour !!!(i said within me),...i felt like rocking his shirt the whole day and never wanting to return it back, but i need to return it and also say thank you, and apologize for my rudeness.....

i folded his shirt neatly and kept it on my bed,.... i'll make sure i wash it nice and clean when i get back home.

mikel's POV

i still couldn't believe that i gave her my shirt,....not just any other shirt but one of my favorite.....this was all Zack's fault,if he had not persuaded me to go to Jason's fucking party, all this wouldn't have happened and I wouldn't have been insulted by any strange lady,.... I am very sure that jason added something to my drink, because i have never been drunk in my entire life.

I sighted Dianna coming to my room, I knew she was coming to pester me about something else,

Dianna's POV

I walked happily to mikel's room, I just hope that he can help me out.....

Dianna: hey bro!!.....(daianna said smiling)

Mikel: dianna what do you want this time.....the party is over.....(mikel said coldly)

Dianna: I'm not here to bother you about any party,

..... I need your favour please??

Mikel: No, ...

Dianna: c'mon mikel, I haven't even said anything yet...(she said whining)

Mikel: like I said dianna, I can't help you with anything.....(mikel answered, picking up his phone)

Dianna: okay, I promise I will never bother you about anything again, ...if you help me this last time... (dianna said, seizing his phone and putting it behind her back.)

Mikel: okay Dianna, anything that would make you leave me alone...(he said giving up)

Dianna: okay.....there is a newbie in school,and in your grade precisely, her name is caira, she've got a very beautiful eyes, pretty face, Sweet lips, nice voice, long hair, nice body shape..gosh!! I wish I was like her!!...(dianna said admiringly).....i like her and would love to talk to her and be

friends with her, but i don't know how to talk to her.....you know I'm really shy right??..and you've got no issues talking with girls.....soo.....

Mikel: soo...??

Dianna: soo...i was just thinking if you can....

Like.....date her...then you'll invite her over for dinner,then, i would have a good opportunity to talk to her...(dianna said, fiddling with the tip of her clothe)

...

...

Tbc

...you guys should pls bear with me for my habitual late posting, my phone is faulty and I'm using my roommate's phone to type

my better half

(Highschool crush)

Episode 14

By Authoress prudence

AT THE CAMFORD'S MANSION

mikel was in his room, busy with his phone when jason's text suddenly came In , jason was inviting him over for his house warming party which was taking place the next day at jason's residence, he smirked as he read the message....he knows very well that jason don't actually like him, so, he see no reason why jason should invite him over for his house warming party.....well, jason should know the kind of person that he is,..he doesn't really attend any party hosted by scumbags like him,so he wouldn't be attending.

He was still reading jason's message when zack came in,

zack: dude, did you receive jason's text ??

mikel: yeah...i received his dumb invite

zack: so, what are you waiting for ??....let's go shopping, the party is tomorrow evening and I wouldn't wanna miss it....(zack said excitedly)

mikel: you can go zack.....but I'm not attending jason's dumb party

zack: why man?.. his sisters are gonna be there (zack said with a wink)

mikel: I'm not interested in his sisters,... you can go if you want to

zack: c'mon dude... can't you at least give it a try??
.....i mean,...i know you dont like jason,... but that shouldn't be enough reason why you shouldn't attend his party...you can just come with me and wait for a few minutes, and if you still insist on leaving,..then, we could probably go somewhere else

mikel: alright but I wont be staying longer than 10 minutes...(mikel answered perfunctorily, still busy

with his phone)

zack: okay... ..(zack was interrupted by Dianna who suddenly came into mikel's room,she seems to have been eavesdropping on their conversation)

Dianna: well,well,well!!!..where could the party VIPs be heading to this time around...(she said walking, with her both hands at akimbo)

zack: trust me Dianna, you wouldn't wanna know.

Dianna: let me guess,....hmm...could it be jason's party??...(she asked playfully)...well , if it's jason's party, I would like to go with you(she said and jumped on mikel's bed like a kid)

zack: Dianna I think you should stay back at home, because this party isn't for kids....

.....Dianna stood up in range Immediately zack said that

Dianna: are you calling me a kid??(she said with a stern look)

zack: not actually Dianna, but I think you shouldn't be found at this kind of parties.

Dianna; and what kind of party do you think I should be found,* DAD* ??(she said sarcastically)

zack: maybe,.. a 3 years old birthday party, or a kids company picnics...or....a kids choice award,....or...a kids Christmas party...or..(zack was still talking when Dianna hit him on his arm,playfully)

Dianna: do I really look like a kid to you?.... I'll prove to you that I am not a kid.....(she said and stormed out of mikel's room)

zack: what could your sister be up to, mikel??....anything it is, I just hope she doesn't think of following us to jason's party, because that would be a very bad idea.

BECCA'S POV

I laid down on my bed excitedly as I dialed Noah's

phone number , It's been a while since I heard from him and I also need to start making my first move,...i called him repeatedly but he wasn't taking his calls, I was about giving up when he suddenly picked up.

Noah: hello becca ...(he said over the phone)

becca: hi Noah, how are you doing?

Noah: I'm fine becca, how is caira?

.....i felt my heart stop beating when he mentioned caira's name, why should he be asking after caira,?? ...I thought they broke up for good...

becca: uhmm..... I'll call you back Noah (I said and ended the call)

THE NEXT DAY

CAIRA'S POV

I came back from school really exhausted,i felt like

having a long nap, but i really needed to get ready for jason's house warming party, or else, he's never gonna forgive me for missing his party,...he even bought me a pretty dress just to make sure that I'll be coming, isn't he Soo nice??..

.....i wore the dress and stood in front of the mirror, I smiled lightly as I admired the dress, it was soo beautiful and looked nice on me....i was still admiring my dress when mum came in.

mum: wow!! it seems like someone is going on a date, what a nice dress you've got there caira(she said teasingly)

caira: it's not a date mum, and thanks for the compliment anyway.(i said,still admiring my dress)

mum: awwn!!! noah got you this dress?....isn't he soo sweet?? (she asked, also admiring my dress)

I felt heart skip immediately she mentioned noah's name,...i don't know why I can't get my self

to tell my mum that I and noah are no longer together,...she would be so dissapointed because she loved noah and took him as her own son, and noah has done a lot in our life.

caira: uhmm.....yes... he..is (I starmmered)

mum:alright girl, but remember, NO SEX TONIGHT
!!(she said going out)

caira: got it mum!!!(I also yelled back in response).....i took off the dress and scurried off to the bathroom to have a shower and get going..

ZACK'S POV

it was about 8:21pm, I was able to convince mikel to go with me, and we were about driving out to jason's party when mikel suddenly asked me to stop.

Zack: what's the problem mikel, I've told you ealier that.....(i was interrupted by mikel when he suddenly spoke out)

mikel: check the back sit if anyone is there.

I checked the back sit like mikel said, but I found no one there

zack: there's no one there.... Can we go now?(I said,feeling disturbed)

mikel: check the boot.

Zack : I stepped out of the car grumpingly, ...i opened the boot and was soo shocked to see dianna laying inside the boot, she steppped out of the car and smiled nervously ,there was embarrasment written all over her face as she came out.

Zack; what were you doing in the boot dianna?? (I asked, really shocked)

Dianna: uhmm,.... I think I lost my way, I'm Soo sorry for bothering you two,...you can get going now...(She said and ran back home)

Mikel: you see what I'm talking about?? I know my

sister to well, she doesn't give up easily,..

..... Zack stood gobsmacked, he couldn't believe what just happened.

Caira's POV

I arrived at the party venue, rather too early,.....I sat at the bar alone because I couldn't even find Jason who invited me for his party, I tried his number severally but he wasn't responding to my calls, I guess he was just too busy, it isn't easy to host a party, (I concluded)....I was still sitting at the bar when the bartender came to me and offered me a glass of lemonade, I took the glass of lemonade and sipped a little quantity, it was really tasty,... I was about gulping the whole contents down when someone entered,....it was Mikel, OMG!!, I felt that loud thud in my heart again, everyone got distracted immediately Mikel stepped in, he was looking hot and handsome as usual,... everyone turned to have a look at the

almighty Mikel camford.....he walked to an empty table and took his sit.....I kept admiring him until I was tired, and then I continued with my drink.

Mikel's POV

I took my seat while Zack went in search of Jason's sister,.... shortly after wards, a bartender came and offered me a glass of lemonade, I seriously wanted to decline, but I just decided to keep my self busy, I collected the drink and gulp down a little,..

The party was really populated and dirty, good thing I told Dianna to stay back home, I was already becoming fed up with the party and needed to go,...I dialed Zack's number but he wasn't picking up

Jason's POV

The bartender walked to me and informed me that he successfully delivered the drinks to the two Target and they both drank from it,...the effect

would begin in 5 minutes.....

Jason: guys, is everything ready??...(I whispered)

Fred: yes boss, we've turned off all the security cameras.

Jason: good!!, now, let's wait for the reaction...(he said with a smirk)

Caira's POV

I waited anxiously for Jason, I just called him but he said he was really busy with other guest who came from far.....how can Jason just invite me over for his party and abandon me huh?!!!

.....few minutes after waiting, I felt a little bit sleepy, so I stood up to go to the bathroom,... when I stood up, I felt a loud bang in my head, I sat down quickly and held on to my table to avoid falling down, I think I'm drunk, but I never knew that lemonade contained alcohol,..... My head was spinning and i really felt like puking.....I lay down

my head to rest but I felt someone tapping me softly....I raised my head to see Jason smiling, he finally decided to come.(I said within me)

Jason: caira are you okay??

Caira: I Don't think I'm fine,... I'm feeling a little tipsy.

Jason: I think you are drunk,...let me help you up (he said and lifted me up in his arms)

..... Everything began to appear blur to me and i didn't know where he was taking me to

Caira: Jason, where are you taking me to?(I asked weakly)

Jason: don't worry dear,...I'm taking you somewhere safe.

Mikel's POV

I started to get a little sleepy,...I really think I should get going,...Zack can find his way back

home,..

I was about leaving when I saw someone that caught my attention,it was Dianna and Jason,.. Jason was taking her away, while she seem to be asleep, damn it!!!(He muttered angrily).... this girl is really stubborn and stupid!!, How did she even get here??....I really need to save her....

Mikel took a bottle of wine with him and followed Dianna and Jason,

Jason's POV

I took caira to the room and took off her clothes hurriedly,..I actually drugged my friend's drink, so I can enjoy her alone for the night,.... they must be really stupid to think I will let them share caira with me,... IT'S JUST YOU AND ME CAIRA(I said as I got on top of her)...I was about setting to business when I felt something hard broke on the surface of my head.

Mikel's POV

I hit Jason with the bottle of wine and he passed out....I took Dianna to the car, and placed her in the front seat, she do have a lot of questions to answer when she wakes up....,...I was really drowsy and couldn't see properly as I drive,...I drove at a very high speed and crashed into a hard barrier,....I tried moving the car but it seems to be stuck.....good thing no one got hurt.

Mikel was still struggling to move the car when he passed out

★the next morning★

Caira's POV

As I opened my eyes slowly, I felt a sharp pain in my head,..the first thing I saw was a strange ceiling that doesn't look like that of my room,... where the hell am I??...I felt like I was lying on something really hairy,...I turned weakly just to find myself on

the chest of a guy.....I stood up quickly and discovered that I was half naked with Mikel beside me...not knowing what I was doing, I screamed unconsciously....

Caira: ahhh!!!!!!!!!!!!!!

TBC

...

..

..was it really a coincident that Dianna found her self in Mikel's boot?? my better half

(highschool crush)

By Authoress prudence

Episode 16

soo...i was just thinking if you can.... Like....date her...then you'll invite her over for dinner,then, i would have a good opportunity to talk to

her...(dianna said, fiddling with the tip of her clothe)

is that all you have to ask,....Mikel asked unconcerned

yes(Dianna responded happily)

then you can go...Mikel responded coldly

is that a yes.... Dianna said happily

NO... Mikel responded coldly

but Mikel,....you already promised to help me out.....(dianna said whining)

look Dianna,.... you can just go straight to this cara or whatever you said her name was.....and tell her that you like her and would love to be friends with her,.....Mikel said, taking back his phone from dianna

it's not that easy Mikel!!....(Dianna said, looking unsatisfied)

you can leave Dianna....Mikel said

no!! I am not leaving until you agree!.....Dianna said pouting but Mikel simply walked to his drawer,..took his car key and headed to the exit door

..

Becca's POV

I dialed Noah's number again,...I was very much prepared for anything that's coming my way,....he picked up at the first beep like he's been expecting my call.

hey Becca!..Noah said over the phone

hi Noah... Becca responded

how are you and caira, I've been trying to call her but she isn't reachable... Noah blew the bomb again.

I'm fine Noah....(Becca said ignoring what he said

about caira)

okay,.....and caira??....I've been trying to reach her for some days now..(he repeated again)

By the way Noah,...I also wanted to tell you about something..... I'm Soo sorry about your breakup with caira,..she've told me about everything.....I tried all my best to persuade her to at least apologize to you, but she said no!! and I asked her why she've been cheating on you...but she said, she's tired of the relationship and doesn't know how to tell you and you can't afford the amount of money your Dad gives to her anytime they have sex....Soo sorry Noah, I did all I could, I just hope you find a better person.... Becca said with a smirk really...??..but I've been doing all I could to.....(Noah was still talking when Becca cut in rudely)

I know Noah!!!...(Becca cut in).... I understand caira more than you think...she doesn't ever get

satisfied with what she have,..but not to worry, if you ever need anything, just know that I'm here for you and I will always be, and when I say anything, I mean anything at all.

The_next_day

Caira's POV

I walked to the class hurriedly, my mum wasn't able to drop me at school so, i was late again!!....when I got to the class, lectures had already started and everyone was too busy to notice my presence,..I took my seat quietly and I scoured the whole class room with my eyes carefully in search of Jason but I couldn't find him..Soo I brought out my laptop and followed up with the lesson, I could sight Mikel,..he was just few distance away from me,..I checked my bag pack to be sure that I brought his shirt along...it was intact!!, ...all that was on my mind was how I was too return mikel's shirt and also apologize,..I

just hope he doesn't give me that grumpy attitude.

Shortly after wards, the teacher turned to make an announcement...she was the new tourism teacher.

Alright class, I believe we all have a study partner and have communicated to them.....she asked, adjusting her glasses

Yes, the whole glass answered in unison.

Good,...next week, we are all going to be embarking on a one week field trip and nature wildlife exploration,..we will all be encamping at gyeongbuk tourist attraction province of south Korea and it's compulsory for every student, including you Mikel....(she said, pointing her index finger at Mikel)...and you are all are gonna be pairing with your study partner and sharing a tent and working together as a team..don't worry everyone, securities, first aid and foods are going to be provided by the school, and we will make

sure you don't lack anything.

You all are going to be spending a week outside nature and while outside nature, gyeongbuk is wide and has Soo many interesting features and plants, Soo you are expected to take pictures of every attractive spots, creature and plant you find interesting and write a short note on it, that would be part of your mark. each team are expected to share a tent,... Don't worry class, the camping is only for a week and you and your team are expected to work together for your success, remember!! One person's error can affect the whole team

And by that, she concluded and left the class room. there was Soo much murmuring immediately she left the classroom, it seems most of the students do not really like the idea of them staying outside nature for a couple of days, well, if anyone should be complaining here, it should be me, Because I

don't even know if my study partner (Mikel) would be coming along,....he is definitely not coming because ever since I and Mikel got merged as study partners, we've never had any interaction and he didn't even reply to my message I sent to him through Zack,....I am definitely going to fail this class

.

Soon it was time for lunch break, so I walked nervously in search of Mikel, I spotted him and Zack, they were both at the back of the canteen, I summoned courage and walked to him with his shirt at the back of my hands neatly folded, I unknowingly started rehearsing what to tell him and how to present his shirt back to him.....

goodness!! I was already developing a cold feet, I just hope I don't tremble when delivery my speech to him,....

Hi !! ...I said nervously standing in front of him, but

he didn't even spare me a side glance, ...but good thing Zack was there, Soo he responded

Hey beautiful !! ... Zack said jovially

Hi Zack, uhhmm....I just want to have a word with your friend...I said with my eyes fixed on Mikel.

Okay,...what do you want because I don't think Mikel is available to talk to anyone right now....he answered, his eyes also fixed on me.

Uhhh,...I just want to return his shirt to him and also apologize.....I said handing over his shirt to him, but still, Mikel didn't even spare me a side glance nor say anything, but Zack stretched out his hands and accepted the dress, which made me feel relieved

I am Soo sorry for misunderstanding you Mikel, and I also wish we could work together as study partners to make this semester a success for the both of us.....I mumbled nervously and was about

leaving when he suddenly spoke out

Wait...he called back, while I turned around, feeling a bit happy that he finally wanted to say something.

You can keep the shirt,...he said sipping from the cup of coffee in front of him.....I felt a loud thud in my heart immediately he said that.

I'm sorry, it was a misunderstanding....I said in a low tune

This have nothing to do with your sorry.....he answered coldly.

I was about taking the shirt from his table when Zack spoke out.

Don't worry dear, you can leave the shirt here, I'll talk to Mikel,....he said with a smile

Thank you Soo much, I said and walked away quickly before Mikel says anything again.

Mrs Elena

I was on my way coming back from the Market when a car suddenly passed across me with a very high speed, spilling dirty water on me,.

Oh my goodness...(Mrs Elena said, looking at her stained dress, which was covered in mud)

(The car instantly halted and a beautiful woman in her late 40's was seen stepping out of the big luxurious car, she walked quickly to Mrs Elena while Mrs Elena stood in surprise)

I'm soo sorry madam, I didn't see you coming.....she said, taking off her sunglasses

Really!!?...how would you see me when you are riding in a car that worth my life, while I am.....

(Mrs Elena speech was cut short by the woman when she suddenly spoke out)

Elena ?? ...the Woman said with a surprise look.

Sorry??... have we met before??....mrs Elena asked looking confused..

Of course lena, it's me Caroline, your bestie in college....the woman said drawing nearer to Mrs Elena.

Oh my goodness, Caroline!!!

Tbc

..

Who's Caroline and what's her relationship to Caira's mum

my better half

(Highschool crush)

By authoress prudence

Episode 17

Mrs Elena's POV

Caroline!!....oh my goodness is this you?? (She asked amidst joy)

Of course my dear, where have you been all this years... Caroline asked holding Elena's hands.

I've been around Caroline, you look Soo good, I can't believe that this is the same Caroline that I knew 28 years ago, it seems you have really been enjoying the best of life.... (Elena said admiring Caroline)

Hmm, Lena, why not join me, so we can talk better??..(Caroline said, pointing towards her car)

It was really a long drive to Caroline's house but we finally got there, at first I found it hard to believe that that was where she was living until the security man opened the gate ushering her in, while she drove confidently into the mighty mansion.

Caroline...is this where you live??.(Elena muttered, extremely shocked)

Yes dear this is where I and my family live...(she

answered proudly)

Wow, I never knew brayn could ever afford all this, I guess he worked really hard....(she said admiringly)

Uhhm.... actually it's not brayn, and please, I wouldn't want you to mention his name to anyone's hearing, let's just go inside, I'll explain everything...she said almost in a whisper.

We got inside and sat on the couch, the house was really magnificent, there was a lot of interesting and beautiful stuffs, everything in and out of the house looks quite expensive.

Soo Lena, how have you been...(Caroline asked, handing a glass of wine over to Elena)

Well, as you can see,... things aren't moving the way it's supposed to....(Elena said collecting the glass of wine)

Really, what about Hudson, how is he doing...

(Caroline asked with a look of concern)

Hudson is dead, he died 6 years ago.... Elena said sadly

Oh my goodness, I'm.... Soo sorry Lena, what happened?..(Caroline asked with shock)

He died of diabetes, and ever since he died, things have never been the same, but good thing he left me with a priceless jewel, which is the only reason I smile and the only one I live for, we had only one daughter caira, ever since Hudson passed away, she have been my only source of Joy, I would have probably died of depression if not for her. When Hudson died, she had to drop out of school, but luckily she applied for a scholarship and made it, she now study's at C.H.S, I'm Soo proud of her
....(Elena said taking a sip from her glass of wine)

Wait!!, Do you mean camford
highschool??.....(Caroline asked alarmed)

Yes, do you know anything about this school..(Elena asked perplexed)

Of course, my husband is the CEO of camford's highschool, ...why didn't I meet you earlier than this, there wouldn't have been any need to undergo the stress of writing any scholarship proposal...(Caroline said regretfully)

Wow, you actually mean that your husband is CEO of camford highschool?(Elena asked gobsmacked)

Yes, Lena,...you know, when I broke up with brayn I thought that was the end of the world until I met camford,...(Caroline said proudly)

I thought you and brayn were good together, what made you break up with him.!?... (Elena asked concerned.)

It's a long story dear... (Caroline answered sadly)

Elena and Caroline talked for a long time until it was almost getting dark and Elena needed to go

back home, Caroline dipped her hand in her bag and brought out a bundle of money and offered to Elena, but Elena rejected her kindness,

C'mon Elena, this is nothing, use this to support your self and your family.....(Caroline said offering the money to Elena again)

Look Caroline, you should know me very well, I don't feel comfortable accepting money I didn't work for.... (Elena said rejecting the money again)

No Lena i insist that you should take this...(Caroline said not giving up)

Again no!, If I take this money, it will only sustain us for a couple of days, accepting this money will only make me feel like a beggar, the best that you can offer me is a job to work here, any kind of job at all will do. (Elena said with a shrug)

Lena, how can you ask for such a thing from me, you can't work for me, but if you ever need

anything, you can come to me.... (Caroline answered sincerely)

Please Caroline, I need a better paying job to take care of my self and daughter, giving me money won't help, for how long do you plan on giving me money....it makes me look like a beggar, don't you see?.... (Elena said)

Okay if you insist, I can give you a job as a house keeper, though, there is no vacancy for now but I just need to help you. How old is your daughter??...(Caroline asked)

She's 18... (Elena answered happily)

Okay, I will be offering her a job as a house keeper, and not you Lena. I can't have you work for me, don't worry about how she's going to cope with work and school, she can take up a full-time job here and also move in with us, I'll pay her \$5,000 monthly and \$1,000 weekly and I'll take care of her expenses while she's working for me and also, if

she wishes to further her education to college, I'll also take full responsibility of that, I hope that's okay??. Caroline asked

Thank you Caroline, but you don't really have to do all that, I(Elena was still talking when Caroline cut in nicely)

I'll just take that as a thank you ... (Caroline said)

thank you Caroline, I don't know what I would've done without you, I was actually thinking of what I would do if Caira graduate's highschool and decides to go to college.... (Elena said in appreciation)

Don't worry Elena, I'm here for you and I also promise to take full responsibility of her safety, my daughter Dianna, have been longing for a sister, I am sure she would like her, and as for my son Mikel, he don't really have a problem with who I bring to the house as long as the person doesn't bothers him....(Caroline said getting ready to drop Elena

off)

Caira's POV

I got back from school since 3:30pm but mum wasn't home, it was getting dark and I was beginning to get worried, I tried calling her with our home telephone but she wasn't picking her calls, I was about retrying again when I sighted a beautiful red car driving into the compound, for a while I was scared, we haven't had any rich visitors in our home for years, but I was surprised when I saw mom coming down with a grocery bag, she came out of the car looking all excited, she stood and waved at the person inside the car till the car departed. She was smiling soo wide, I have never seen her this happy ever since dad passed away. What could be the reason for her joy, could I be expecting a new dad??.... No, no no!!..mum loves Dad Soo much and would never replace him, but who could possibly be in that car that's making

mum smile Soo much?

I was still looking through the window when mum walked in

Honey, I'm Soo sorry for keeping you waiting, I know you're really hungry right now, but before I do anything, I have a good news for you.....(she said walking in and throwing her tired self on the couch)

Who dropped you off mum??..I asked confusedly

Oh!! Sorry dear, that was my childhood friend and college bestie, Caroline, I stumbled into her on my way coming back from the grocery store today.....(Mum answered happily)

Oh!!, I see!!...so, what's your good news (I said, and placed my head on her lap happily while she stroke my hair gently)

Well, I got you a job, not just any kind of job, but a good one,...you will be earning \$5,000 monthly and

\$1,000 weekly

Oh my gosh!! Mum!! Are you serious, that's really huge....(I said in excitement)

That's not all honey, your boss promised to take care of your fee when you get to college, but you'll have to move in with her and only come visiting during weekends...mum announced again, and this time I jumped and screamed happily

Ahh!! Mum, I am Soo taking this job, I don't care if I'm moving in with her, when I'm I starting.... I asked eagerly.

Relax girl!! That's not all the good news, guess where you'll be working..(.mum said)

Where! Where!! Where mum!! You're really making me anxious.....I said impatiently

You will be working at your favorite celebrity's mansion, THE CAMFORD!!.....(she released the bomb)

TBC

..

..if caira's is going to work at the mansion, she should better get prepared to face Zoey.

My better half

Highschool crush

By Authoress prudence

Episode 18

Caira's POV

You will be working at your favorite celebrity's mansion, THE CAMFORD!!.....(she released the bomb).

"Wait, mum are you for real?" I stammered

Of course my dear, I know you are extremely surprised and...(Mum was still talking excitedly when I cut in rashly)

"Yes mum, I am extremely surprised, I mean, how

do you expect me to work under my grade mate Mikel.??, That's impossible, I can't do that!". I said still in shock

What do you mean by you can't work under Mikel?, You aren't working for Mikel but for his family, and you are not going to be working for free, you are ..

"I know mum, I still can't!,(I cut in again) upon all the houses in Seoul, why does it has to be the camford's mansion, mum if that is your good news, then I guess I'm not interested". I replied and was about walking away when mum called me back.

"Caira, I can't force you to accept the job offer if you don't wish to, and I also never wanted you to take up any part-time job while you are still schooling. My wish is that you get an easy education when you don't have to struggle or work part-time to be able to feed in school or purchase whatever you want. I would have loved to take the stress of working while you focus on academics

but Caroline said I wasn't qualified for this job, and I know Caroline, she wouldn't wanna offer me this job. My monthly salary is barely enough for the both of us, we need a better paying job to be able to feed well, my salary can't send you to college, we need a better paying job if you will ever go to college, Is not my wish that you go through the stress of working and schooling, but I don't have enough and I really wish you understand with me." Mum said calmly, she was obviously broken. I regretted ever rejecting her job offer, I think I just have to accept it before she starts lamenting about dad again.

"I'm sorry mum, I'll take the job and I promise we will never lack anything once I start the job" I said hugging her .

You don't have to do it if you don't want to. I just wish your father was still alive, we wouldn't have been.....

"Here you go again mum" (I said cutting mum off),
"like I said mum, it's fine, I'll take the job and earn
enough money to settle all our bills, okay??" I said
holding her hands.

"Alright dear" mum said giving me a light peck.

Mikel got home and sat on my couch, he brought
out the shirt caira returned to him, he folded the
cloth and was about keeping it in his wardrobe
when he suddenly stopped, "why did I even accept
the dress in the first place?" He thought to himself.
Mikel was the type of person who doesn't share his
clothes with any one, not even Zack his best friend
or his own family, he felt like disposing the shirt
but he didn't think he should do it urgently,
"maybe anytime else" he thought quietly as he
hanged the shirt inside the wardrobe. He was
about turning back when he felt a hand around
him, he turned slightly to see who it was just to

find Zoey smiling sheepishly behind him.

"Hey boss, long time no see right?" Zoey said still holding Mikel around his waist.

Zoey this is not the right time, my dad is home and wouldn't hesitate to fire you if he senses anything fishy" Mikel said freeing himself from Zoey's hold.

"So?? We can just go somewhere else, that shouldn't be an excuse" Zoey said almost in a whisper.

"We can do this any other days Zoey, I think you should go back to your room" Mikel said coldly

"Mikel what is happening to us?, Why are you pushing me away, I

"Zoey, get out, I'll call you when I need you" Mikel interrupted zoey rudely.

"Mikel, you weren't like this before, it seems you now have a new mistress, but that isn't my problem, just hope I don't get my hands on that

bitch because things are gonna get really crazy for her" Zoey said and stormed out of Mikel's room while Mikel ignored Zoey, he wasn't really interested in what she's saying, he knew Zoey too well, she's just blabbering, she can do nothing.

~The next day~

"Wake up caira, how can you be sleeping for Soo long on a Saturday, come take your breakfast and get ready for work" mum said tapping me hardly.

"C'mon mum, it's a weekend, i should have enough rest" I said tiredly

"Oh no you don't sweetie, your new boss just called, she said you should be in the mansion in 2 hours time, get up sleepy head, you wouldn't wanna be a bad employee" mum said leaving my room.

"I'll be down in 5 minutes" I replied loudly.

Urghh!!! (I groaned) I can't believe I'm starting a

new job at the camford's mansion today, why can't I be like every other kid who eat and buy whatever they want without struggling or working for it, I feel a little nervous about working in the mansion, what would be Mikel's reaction when he sees me, gosh!!

how will Mikel even look at me when he finally gets to know that I'm just a poor girl who doesn't deserve to be in C.H.S.

I was still deep in thought when I heard my name down stairs, oh!! I almost forgot that mum is still waiting for me downstairs.

"Coming!!" I said aloud as I rushed downstairs.

In no time, I was done preparing, I went down stairs to take my breakfast.

kindly hi novelsrepublic on WhatsApp on plus two three four eight zero five five eight eight nine one right three to get added to the novels group

"Ready so soon !!" Mum said coming downstairs.

"Yes mum, now how do I get to the camford's mansion" I asked with a bread full mouth.

"Don't worry, I'll drop you off on my way to work, I've spoken to Caroline this morning, she'll help you out with all the necessary materials and information you need to know about your new job. Try to be in your right behavior, don't violate any rule, don't worry, your new boss is kind and caring, she wouldn't scold you unnecessarily, but just in case you are not treated nicely, feel free to tell me, and I'll personally ask you to quit. Okay honey?" Mum said, picking up her car key and heading out.

"Okay mum" I said trailing behind her reluctantly.

In less than an hour we arrived at the camford's mansion, mum parked outside the big gate, the sight of the gate alone was breathe taking, mum brought out her phone and contacted someone, informing the person that we were outside the

gate, "that should probably be madam Caroline"

"Alright honey, this should be my final bus stop, your boss is sending a maid who will lead you into the mansion" mum said ending the call

"Make sure you give me a call when you close for today, so I can come pick you up" mum said and ignited her car engine, while I stepped out of the car carefully.

"Okay mum, I'll see you after work then" I said sadly

"Cheer up baby girl, you'll like your new job" mum said with a wink and drove off while I stood outside awaiting the maid. In less than a minute I saw the big gate open, revealing a young pretty lady who should be of my age.

"Hello, Are you caira?" She asked with a smile.

"Yes I am" I replied with a faux smile.

"Please come with me" she said ushering me in

while I trailed behind her slowly,

I got into the mansion and was amazed by the sight in front of me, it was extremely beautiful, how can only one family live in such a big house??. I was really speechless, i kept on admiring the entire environment until we've gotten inside. the big royal door opened, ushering us in, the house was beyond beautiful, I tried as much as possible to maintain my composure as i scoured my eyes round the sitting room.

As we approach the dinning room, we met a beautiful woman sitting in the dinning with a maid dressing her hair, the woman's face beamed in delight immediately she saw us coming, I guess she must be Madam Caroline.

"She's here ma'am" the maid who ushered me in said with a slight bow.

"Good day ma'am" I also greeted the woman with a slight bow.

"Good day my dear, you must be caira, right?" The woman asked still smiling.

"Yes ma'am" I answered

"Your mother told me a lot about you, so, what are you good at doing?" Madam Caroline asked

Virtually everything ma'am, I am good at cleaning, washing dishes and cooking" I answered with a little bit of exaggeration.

"Great!! You are hired!, Your duty here is to assist the maid in cooking, serving of meals, and cleaning up.

For today, you will be allowed to go home by 6:00 pm, but after tommorow, if your performance impresses me, you will be working here permanently, which means you will have to move in with us,. is that ok by you dear?" Madam Caroline asked.

"Yes ma'am, I'm fine with that" I answered

cheerfully.

"Okay, I'll like you meet my family, ...Tina please send for Dianna and Mikel!!" Madam Caroline said to one of the maids while she nodded in abidance. ,
...few minutes later, the maid was seen walking down the stairs with Dianna behind her.

"Ma'am, young master seems to be busy, he said he would be down in an hour time" the maid said.

"I'm Soo sorry that you can't get to meet my son now, Mikel is always like that, he barely comes out of his room except he has somewhere important to go, but this is my only daughter, Dianna..

Dianna say hello to our new worker

"Caira !!! Oh my gosh, mum!! Caira now works with us!!!" Dianna said interrupting her mum.

"Yes Dianna, do you guys know each other?" Mrs Caroline asked in shock.

"Off cause mum!!! we know each other,....I

mean...she might not really know me, but I know her, she's also in my school!!" Dianna said in excitement.

"Oh dear!! I almost forgot" Mrs Caroline said

" It's Soo nice meeting you caira!!, C'mon, Let me show you my room!!" Dianna said holding caira's hand but Mrs Caroline interrupted.

"Not Soo fast Dianna, caira is here to work, so, let her be!!" Mrs Caroline said

"But mum!!"

No buts Dianna, back to your room immediately, you can see her after work" Mrs Caroline said, while Dianna ran back to her room begrudgingly.

"I hope you don't mind Dianna, she's always like that, sometimes I don't really blame her, it's because she doesn't have a sister and Mikel is just too busy for her, so, most times, she feels lonely"

"Oh!" I muttered simply.

" Okay, let's get you started, Tina would get you changed into the maiden's uniform and show you around the mansion, she'll also teach you the workers rules and regulations and she would appoint you on your first task, is that clear?" Mrs Caroline asked.

"Yes ma'am" I answered with a bow.

In no time I was done changing into the maiden's uniform and Tina showed me around the mansion and taught me the do's and don't of the mansion.

"Your first task would be "cleaning the young master's bedroom" Tina said with a smile.

Uhhh, sorry but, who's the young master?" I asked Tina.

Oh, forgive me!! The young Mistress is Dianna while the young master is mikel, please don't ever make any mistake by calling them by their names,

the young mistress don't really have any problem with you calling her by her name but the young master does, Calling Mikel by his name could cost you your job" Tina said in a whisper while I stood gobsmacked.

" Wait, so, you mean I should clean mikel's room alone, or you are sending some maids who will assist me?". I asked surprised.

"No caira, all the workers are busy at the moment, i know the young master's room is quite large, but you will be able to finish cleaning in less than 2 hours"

..

..

.. TBC

my Better half

Highschool crush

By authoress prudence 🖋️🖋️

Episode 19.

Caira's POV

"Uhhh...is there no other job that I can do other than cleaning the young master's room?" I asked

"No dear, all the workers are presently busy doing other things" Tina answered with a shrug.

"Okay, can you please lead me to the young master's room?" I asked Tina.

"Sure!!" Tina answered.

It was really a long walk to mikel's room but we finally got there. I sighted a big beautiful door with a golden inscription, "MIKEL" " that must be mikel's room" I said within me. I was too busy admiring everything that I couldn't even notice that Tina had stopped to greet Miss Zoey.

"Good day miss Zoey". Tina said with a slight bow.

"Who the hell is she?" Zoey asked referring to me.

"Uhhh,... She's the new maid here and she was appointed to clean up the young master's bedroom" Tina said.

"Why is she looking around like a weirdo, is she daft?". Zoey asked rudely

"She's...pro..bably lust in admiration, right caira?" Tina said snapping me out of my thoughts.

"What??". I asked confusedly .

"This is miss zoey and she's young master's secretary" Tina said with an eye roll.

Ohh!!, I'm sorry, good day miss Zoey" I said with a slight bow.

"Tina, if you have nothing else to do here, then I think it's wise for you to leave us" zoey said ignoring my greetings.

"Okay Miss Zoey". tina said and left, leaving me to

Zoey.

"So, you are the new maid here, right?" Zoey asked staring at me intensely.

"Yes, I am" I answered

"Why is your maidens uniform soo tight and short, you are here to work and not to seduce anyone, do you know I could fire you for this??" Zoey said with her eyes fixed on me.

"I'm soo sorry Miss, this was the largest uniform in the store" I answered quickly, I was so scared of loosing my job.

"Get lost" miss zoey said to me with a look of irritation, i turn swiftly to mikel's room, I was about opening his door when I heard Zoey called again, "jeez!! What the hell does this lady want from me" I mumbled lowly.

"Yes Miss Zoey" I answered upon facing her.

When ever you're around mikel, walk gently and

don't sway your butt around like this is father's house. Do you understand?" Zoey asked

"Yes Miss Zoey" I answered with an eye roll, but I was careful about it, I turned back and walked gently like Miss Zoey had instructed. Soon, I got to mikel's door and knocked, but there was no response, so, I decided to go in. Immediately I stepped into his room, a nice fragrance welcomed me in, his room was well furnished and extremely big, but it was a little bit messy.

"Hello !!, Anyone in?". I said walking into the room, the room seemed to be empty ,

"should I start cleaning or I should just wait for him to come back" I thought silently within me, I don't think I can wait for him, what if he isn't back till 6:00pm, madam Caroline wouldn't be Happy with me, so, I guess I should start cleaning immediately.

I was feeling a little bit uncomfortable with the dress, and I seriously needed to adjust my zipper,

good thing there was a mirror in his room, so I immediately locked the door and went straight to the mirror, I unzipped my skirt and was still trying to adjust it when I suddenly heard footsteps inside the room, I turned swiftly and found someone walking out of the bathroom, it was mikel!!, Gosh!!! He've been in the bathroom all this while. A towel was tied around his waist, leaving his hot chest exposed, his hair was wet and dripping water, his lips was also wet, making it look attractive for a kiss, I was lust staring at him, "gosh ! how can a human look so cute and hot?"

We were both staring at each other without saying anything, I was about saying something when he suddenly broke the silence.

"What do you want here" he said with surprise written all over his face.

"Uhhh... I'm the new maid here, and I was instructed to clean up your room". I said looking

down, I couldn't afford to look at his face. For a while, he was quiet, but he finally found his voice.

"Leave my room immediately and send for another maid". Mikel said walking to his wardrobe. I felt cold shiver run down my spine immediately he rejected my service, is he still mad at me about what happened the other day?, But I've already apologized, why can't he just forgive and forget about it.

"Mikel, I'm Soo sorry about what happened the other day, I misunderstood....

"Leave now and send for another maid, I wouldn't wanna repeat myself again" mikel interrupted rudely.

I turned back immediately and was about leaving his room when he suddenly called me back, I turned to face him but ensured that i wasn't looking directly into his eyes.

"While you are working here as a maid, don't you ever make any mistake of calling me by my name, if you don't wanna loose your job here" Mikel said picking a cloth from his wardrobe.

"Yes, young master" I said with a bow and walked away.

The rest of my time at the mansion was stressful, good thing Dianna was there to entertain me, Dianna was friendly, humble and carefree, she is nothing like her arrogant and proud brother. Though she's much of a talkative, she talks non-stop, but she's still nice. The mansion was so tiring, good thing mum was there at exactly 6:00pm to pick me up, but unfortunately, I Will be moving into the mansion next week and I won't be allowed to go home until I'm given the permission to go. I feel like quitting this job but mum has high hopes on me.

~monday_morning~

I packed up my things hurriedly while mum prepared breakfast, the worst day ever was finally here, I was moving into the camford's mansion, mum was going to drop my luggages at the mansion and also drop me off at school, after I close from school I will not be coming back home, but I will be going to the mansion. Life without my mum would be really hard for me.

I finalized my arrangements and zipped up my box, I didn't even know why I was packing Soo much clothes and shoes, I wouldn't even be allowed to wear them. I dragged my heavy luggage to the sitting room, I picked up mum's car key and dragged my luggage to the car boot. After that, I went inside the house to have my breakfast.

"Caira!! Are you set to go??" Mum asked walking to the sitting room.

"Yes mum, I'll be done taking my breakfast in 10

minutes!!" I yelled back in response.

In no time, I was done taking my breakfast, mum turned on the car FM and drove out, I was saying goodbye to home and everything thing i loved, and I would have to learn to tolerate that jerk.

Mum dropped me off at school and proceeded to drop my luggage at the mansion, I bid my mom a final goodbye and walked to the school gate.

~Dianna~

Dianna walked out of the female restroom happily, but her mood changed immediately she sighted Janelle and her friends walking towards her, "oh God!! Not again!" Dianna said with an eye roll.

"Hey cutie!!" Janelle said with a faux smile, immediately she got close to Dianna

"Hey Janelle !! What's up?" Dianna also answered with a faux smile.

"I'm good bestie, I was just thinking Dianna, since

we're officially friends now, why don't we get to know each other better?" Janelle said with a smirk.

"And how do we do that?" Dianna asked confusedly.

"Maybe.... inviting me over to have dinner at your place?" Janelle asked. Kindly Hi NovelsRepublic on +2348055889183 on WhatsApp to get added to our novels group and get PDF links

"Alrighty then, we can meet at Florida's restaurant by 6:00pm this evening" Dianna said and was about walking away when Janelle stopped her.

"Relax girl!!, This isn't a date, its a girlfriend dinner, so, I think we should have it at your house this evening" Janelle said smiling.

Uhhh... sure!!....you can". Dianna said stammering, she wasn't quite sure if she could invite Janelle over to her house, Janelle doesn't seem sincere to her, she couldn't even understand

Janelle's sudden closeness to her lately. she knew very well that Janelle never liked her, so, why would she want to have dinner with her.

"Okay bestie!!, Dinner at your place tonight, I'll give you a call once I get to the mansion, catch you later pal!!" Janelle said happily and scurried off"

Caira's POV

After closing hour, it was time to go back to my new home, Dianna seemed to be pretty excited when she got to know that I was moving in with them, she offered to drop me home since we now live together, I didn't hesitate as I hopped into the car tiredly.

Immediately we arrived at the mansion, I left the car hurriedly, I was sick and tired of Diana's numerous questions about myself, she kept asking me lots and lots of questions while we were in the car, I walked away quickly but Dianna was able to catch up with me, she resumed talking

again by informing me that she had prepared a nice room for me, which was very close to hers, immediately we got inside, she led me to my supposed room happily, my luggages and stuffs was already arranged in the room, the room was quite beautiful and well furnished, After Dianna left, I took my shower and changed into the maidens uniform, I resumed my duty but I made sure I stayed far away from mikel's room.

It was evening time and I was already beginning to miss my mum, there was Soo much cooking and arrangements going on, it was obvious that we were expecting a visitor, Dianna and her mum were all dressed up as she also arranged the flowers in the dinning table. Shortly afterwards, the doorbell rang, so, Dianna rushed to get the door.

"Caira!!! Quick, serve the meal, Dianna's friend is

here to have dinner with us" madam Caroline said taking her sit in the dinning room.

"Okay ma'am" I answered and rushed to the kitchen. I took the tray of spontaneously prepared meal in the kitchen and scurried off to the dinning, while the other maids followed along with the bottle of wine.

On my way to the dinning room, I could hear voices and laughter, it seems like the visitor was already in the dinning room, so, I fastened my footstep.

When I got to dinning room, I dropped the tray of food on the table gently.

"Dinner is served" I said with a bow and was about walking away when I heard my name, it wasn't Dianna, neither was it her mum, but the voice sounded Soo familiar. I turned slightly to see who it was, but I was shocked when I saw Janelle, she was one of the girls who challenged me over

talking to Jason.

"Well, well, well, who do we have here" Janelle said with a smirk.

TBC

...

my better half

Highschool crush

By authoress prudence

Episode 20

Well, well, well, who do we have here" Janelle said with a smirk.

"Hmm, do you guys know each other?" Madam Caroline asked placing down her cutlery

"Yes ma'am, we are all in the same school and grade precisely" Janelle answered still looking at caira in shock.

"Wow caira, you never told me that you work as a

maid here, I could have offered you a part-time job as a servant in my father's mansion. I must confess caira, you look much better in maiden's uniform than you look in school uniform" Janelle said picking up her phone and taking a picture of caira

"Thanks for your offer Janelle, but caira is fine with us, and mind you, she isn't a maid, she's my best friend and she's also part of this family" Dianna answered in defense to caira.

Whatever Dianna, it's all the same thing, by the way, where is Mikel, he supposed to be here, I want us to have dinner as a family, is he in his room??" Janelle said standing up, she tried making her way into mikel's room but Dianna was quick enough to stop her.

"No he isn't in his room, why don't you have your sit and be patient for a little while, he'll soon be home" Dianna said leading Janelle back to her sit nicely.

"Alrighty girls, let's eat up before the food gets cold" madam Caroline said.

"Come join us caira!!" Dianna said pulling out a chair for caira to sit, immediately Dianna said that, Janelle started to cough abruptly.

" Oh dear, are you okay?" Madam Caroline asked with concern.

"..I..... think I need water" Janelle stammered in pretence, she was trying to prevent caira from having dinner with them.

" Caira quick, get her water" madam Caroline said in haste while caira rushed to get a glass of water, she fetched a glass of water from the refrigerator and rushed to Janelle, caira reached carefully for Janelle's hands, Janelle took the glass of water carelessly from caira and intentionally made it spill.

"Oh my gosh!! You ruined my dress!!!, Why are you Soo clumsy!!" Janelle yelled in pretence, she was

trying Soo hard to make madam Caroline scold caira.

"I didn't spill it, you.....(caira tried speaking but Janelle cut in rudely)

"Shut up lowlife!!!, how dare you argue with me, you can't even apologize" Janelle said and was about hitting caira when Dianna intervened.

"Stop it Janelle!!! it hasn't gotten to that, it was just a mistake" Dianna said, preventing Janelle from getting closer to caira.

"Did she have any idea who my dad is? How dare she ruin my dinner" Janelle said at the top of her voice.

"And how dare you attempt to fight in front of my mom, do you have any idea who she is?" Dianna fired back.

"I apologise on behalf of caira, please don't take this too personal, I can send for a laundry man and

your dress will be ready before dinner is over"
madam Caroline said calmly.

"Don't bother ma'am, I just want this annoying
maid out of my sight" Janelle said

" Janelle, caira is having.. . .

" Okay dear, caira please leave us for a moment,
we'll talk later" madam Caroline said interrupting
Dianna from finishing her speech.

"Okay ma'am" caira answered with a teary eyes
and left solemnly, immediately caira left, Dianna
ran after her hurriedly.

"Dianna!!, Where are you going to?" Madam
Caroline asked but Dianna ignored her.

"Don't worry about her, she's my friend, I Know her
too well, she'll be back soon" Janelle concluded
with a wink.

Janelle and madam Caroline were still talking
when the door went open and Mikel walked in,

Janelle's eyes beamed in delight immediately she saw Mikel, she stood up and rushed to Mikel immediately.

"Hey Mikel!!, It's me Janelle, I was invited to have dinner with your family" Janelle said trying rather too quickly, but Mikel ignored her and walked to his room.

" Sorry Janelle, Mikel is always like that, he doesn't like the company of strangers" madam Caroline said.

"But I'm not a stranger, I've been here before" Janelle said alarmed

"Really?, When was that?" Madam Caroline asked suspiciously.

Uhhh..... I'm just kidding ma'am, I've never been here before" Janelle answered laughing nervously.

~In_caira's_room~

Caira laid on her bed and with her face covered in

her pillow as she let tears fall freely. Shortly afterwards, Dianna came running into her room, she got on top of caira's bed and tapped her softly.

"Caira, ...I'm sorry" Dianna said with a pout.

"For what Dianna?" Caira said wiping her tears and sitting up.

"If I hadn't invited Janelle over for dinner, all these wouldn't have happened, Dianna said fiddling with the tip of her shirt.

" It's not your fault Dianna, Janelle has always been a pain in the ass" caira said with a sniff.

kindly hi novelsrepublic on WhatsApp on plus two three four eight zero five five eight eight nine one right three to get added to the novels group

"Soo, I'm.. I forgiven?" Dianna asked

"Off course Dan, I wasn't mad at you" caira answered, while Dianna hugged her warmly.

Silence stepped in immediately as the both girls were not saying anything. But Dianna broke the silence.

"Uhhh....caira, there is something I always wanted to ask you" Dianna said looking down.

What's that" caira asked showing interest.

Okay, do you have a boyfriend?" Dianna asked, it took caira a lot of effort to answer the question because she isn't even sure if Noah is ever coming back for her.

..No, I don't, why did you ask?" caira answered not knowing where the question was heading to.

"Nothing, I just want to know" Dianna answered with a look of relief.

Okay" caira answered not satisfied with Dianna's response.

"One more thing caira, do you think my brother is handsome?" Dianna asked with a shy smile.

"Uhhh..... Mikel don't look bad" caira answered getting interested in the topic.

No caira, that was a yes or no question, is my brother handsome?" Dianna asked again.

"Yes, he is" caira answered.

"Don't you like him?" Dianna said with a wink.

"Of course I like him Dianna, do you expect me to hate him?" Caira answered with a nervous laugh.

"Okay, let me make this clear, do you "LOVE" my brother?". Dianna said

"No I don't" caira answered rather too quickly.

"Why caira? Mikel is handsome, hot and cool, I know he might be a jerk sometimes, but he still values beautiful ladies like you, trust me, he's someone you won't regret dating" Dianna said holding caira's hands.

"Dianna Can we just change this topic to.....

"And guess what caira" Dianna said cutting caira off.

"What else Dianna?" Caira answered tiredly.

"He's good in bed" Dianna whispered to caira's hearing.

"Jezz Dan!!!! You're Soo silly, How do you even know that" caira said alarmed.

"Well, let's just say, I spy on him any time I see zoey enter his room" Dianna answered

"You mean Miss Zoey" caira asked.

" Yeah, whatever you call her, she and my brother are always intimate, but I don't think they are dating, because, Mikel don't seem to love her" Dianna answered.

Dummy!! don't you think you are intruding into your brother's privacy?" Caira said hitting Dianna's head playfully.

"It isn't called intruding" Dianna said amidst laughter

Then it's called what?" Caira asked.

It's called "OPERATION MAKE SURE YOUR BROTHER FINDS A PERFECT GIRLFRIEND" Dianna answered as the both girls laughed out loud.

"But caira, I seriously hope that you and Mikel can be together, and I won't relent until I see that come to pass." Dianna said sincerely and was about saying something else when a knock was heard on the door.

Who's at the door, I'm not coming out, I'm sleeping with caira tonight" Dianna answered folding her self in caira's dulvet.

"Caira your friend is about going, come see her off" madam Caroline said behind the door.

"Tell her to get going mum!!" Dianna yelled.

Dianna, c'mon, go and see Janelle off" caira said

dragging her duvet from Dianna's body, while Dianna stood up grumpingly and left

Dianna walked Janelle to the car begrudgingly, when Janelle suddenly brought up a conversation.

"Thank you Soo much for the dinner, I wish we can do this some other days, it must not possibly me dinner again, but we can have a sleepover at your house, isn't that fun?" Janelle asked happily.

"Seriously Janelle, tonight dinner was a disaster and you still think you can come again" Dianna asked with her hands at akimbo.

" C'mon Dianna, I think.....

"I think you're running late and should better get going" Dianna said and walked back to the house.

~the_next_day~

* * * * *
* * * * *

Caira and Dianna drove to school the next morning, in no time they arrived at school and they both went their separate ways. Immediately caira stepped into the classroom, there was an unusual murmuring and look made by everyone, everyone was silently stealing glances at her,... some were silently chuckling as the whole class was busy with their phones that morning. It was Soo weird, how can a class of hundred be busy with their phones at the same time, anyways, caira walked slowly and took her sit, she brought out some number of book and placed it on her table. She was about opening the book when a girl walked up to her.

Hey, can you identify who this person in the picture is?" The girl asked holding out her phone to caira's view.

Caira gasped out loud immediately she saw who it was.

Tbc..

my better half

(Highschool crush)

By authoress prudence.

Episode 21

Caira's POV

Hey, can you identify who this person in the picture is?" The girl asked holding out her phone to my view

I gasped out loud immediately I saw who it was, my mouth dropped in shock, how did they get this picture, that was me on maiden's uniform, I was Soo doomed, all eyes were already on me,...

Gosh, my reputation was ruined, I was still contemplating on how they managed to get the picture when I saw Janelle walk into the classroom, there was a mischievous smirk on her face as she walked in, she was smiling victoriously like she just won an award, that only meant one thing, she was

the one who shared my photo on our School website, I'm aware that Janelle never liked me, but why would she want to embarrass me in this manner, what bad have I ever done to her. With an unimaginable speed, I ran out of the class room with tears threatening to drop from my eyes, some kept staring at me like a piece of rag, while others laughed uncontrollably. I turned and headed straight to the female's restroom, I needed to cool off my head, I was Soo confused and distracted that I didn't even notice that the floor was wet and when I noticed, it was already too late, I tripped and was about landing on the floor when I felt an arm around my waist, I looked up slowly to see who it was, it was Zack, Mikel's best friend.

"Why the rush beautiful?, You should watch where you're going, this is the restroom and it just got mopped, the floor is still slippery" Zack explained still holding me.

"Thank you,... I'm sorry, I have to go" I said with a sniff as I freed my self from his grip and scurried off. When I got inside female's restroom, I sat alone and cried my eyes out, there was weird noises coming from the restroom next to mine, the noise was low but I could hear it quite alright, the noise seems to be moans, I wasn't to sure of what it was, but that wasn't any of my problems at the moment, my problem was how long I would stay in the restroom and how I would be able to face the class the next day.

Shortly after wards, the noise stopped and I sighted someone like Mikel walking out of the same room the moans was coming from, jeez!! What was this guy doing in the female restroom, This was a punishable offence.

~later that day~

OMG!!!, Cairra you were in the female restroom for a whole day, because of that bitch?" Dianna asked

angrily, while I just stared on.

"That bitch needs to be taught a lesson,.... cheer up Caira, that isn't a big deal, just be who you are and not what people want you to be, most students in C.H.S are also from poor background but people never got to know about their financial situation because they're always faking who they are. Just be your self, I'm sure they will get over it soon." Dianna concluded with a shrug.

"Thank you dany, but I think I need to be alone for a while" I said sitting up.

"Okay, Soo... have you spoken with Mikel today?" Dianna asked.

"No, like I said earlier, we don't ever talk to each other, so can you leave my room now?" I asked tiredly.

"Are you asking me to leave you alone" Dianna said pouting.

"Suit your self dany, you can leave whenever you want to,... I'll be the bathroom" i said walking towards the bathroom.

"Wait! wait!!, wait!!!, You can't go in" Dianna said as she ran quickly and blocked the entrance to my bathroom.

"Why can't I go in?" I asked confusedly

"Uhhh..... there's a leakage in your..."

"In my what?" I asked impatiently.

" no, The shower is broken" Dianna said quickly.

"Don't be ridiculous, that's impossible,..I used it this morning and there was nothing like that" I said trying to make my way into the bathroom, it was obvious Dianna was lying, and unfortunately I was not in the mood for any of her silly tricks.

No caira, my mum said you can't use your bathroom today, I don't know why she said so but I think you should just listen to her" Dianna said

with a serious look.

"Really?, Okay I think I should ask her why...

"No, no, that isn't necessary,.. .. She would be probably asleep" Dianna said cutting me off.

"You can just make use of my bathroom for today, and my mum will get it fixed, don't worry, my bathroom is as nice and clean as yours" Dianna said pushing me out of the room.

"Okay, can I at least change into something much more appropriate and also get my clothes" I asked trying to free my self from her grip around my hands.

kindly hi novelsrepublic on WhatsApp on plus two three four eight zero five five eight eight nine one right three to get added to the novels group

"Just go in caira, no one is in my room, and Don't worry about your clothes, I'll get it for you, now go, go go!!!!" Dianna said as she pushed me all the way

to her room, I wasn't comfortable, the only thing giving me coverage was my short towel which was tied around my chest, I perceived something fishy was going on, no doubt!, Dianna was lying, could it be that she wanted me to pass a night in her room again?, She had always complained about being lonely and her room being too big for only her. Well, if that's her plan, I'm sorry but I can't sleep in her room, after I'm done taking my bath, I am Soo leaving.

Immediately I stepped into Dianna's room, indeed there was no one there, so, I walked straight to her bathroom, I unwrapped myself and hanged my towel on the bathroom curtains, I turned on the shower and enjoyed the warm water running down my body.

Ohh!!! Mike..l, faster please!!!, That's right!!!
Uhhh," Zoey moaned loudly as Mikel went deep

into her. They were both engrossed in what they were doing, the sound of Zoey's moans was all over the room, their fun was cut short when they suddenly heard the door open, followed by Dianna's presence, Zoey was shocked but Mikel was beyond shock because he was sure that he had locked the door and his key was still in his pocket. Dianna walked in hurriedly and went straight to Mikel's wardrobe, she placed her hands on top of the wardrobe and brought out a small camera which have been there the whole time.

"Nice work fuck boy, now I'm taking this video to dad, and as for you Zoey, you're so losing your job this time around" Dianna said as she ran out of mikel's room.

"Dianna!!!, Get back here with that camera!!!"
Mikel's voice thundered as he put on his clothes quickly and stormed out of the room in pursuit for Dianna.

"I'll be in my room!!, Come get me!!" Dianna yelled back.

Mikel marched angrily to Dianna's room, he opened the door rudely and went in, immediately he entered, the door shut automatically but he didn't bother,

"Dianna come out right now, we can talk things out" Mikel said in attempt to sound nice.

~~~~~

Caira was still enjoying her warm warter bath when she heard the door to Dianna's room go open loudly and shut again, she turned off the shower to hear who it was, she froze when she heard Mikel's voice, he was in Dianna's room, jeez!! But Dianna assured her that no one ever comes into her room except her, she quietly reached out for her towel on the bathroom curtain, but when she placed her hands on the curtains, she was more shocked as she couldn't find her towel, "it

was right here, who could have taken it?" She asked her self confusedly, she can't go out naked. She was still contemplating on what to do when she suddenly heard the bathroom curtains flung open, her lips dropped in shock when she found Mikel staring at her.

TBC..

My better half

Highschool crush

By Authoress prudence

Episode 23

Woow!!! and you let her slip out of your fingers? No dude, the Mikel I know doesn't let any pretty lady go untouched. What came over you Mikel?" Zack asked Mikel.

"I'm not interested in her" Mikel said simply.



"What!?!?, I know that's a lie because that girl is beautiful and hot....but anyways, if you say you're not interested in her, you can just send her to my room tonight because I think I'm really interested in her body." Zack said.

"I'm not in position to do that, you can ask my mum who hired her" Mikel said.

"C'mon man, you know I can't do that. Or can I ask her out?" Zack asked but Mikel seemed not to be interested in what he was saying.

"Mikel are you even listening!!" Zack said aloud.

"Yeah, whatever!! You can go ahead and ask her out" Mikel answered perfunctorily.

\*\*\*\*\*

"Caira, I said I'm sorry, can we talk?" Dianna said sitting behind caira's door, she have been knocking for over 30 minutes but caira wasn't responding.

"I promise never to play such silly tricks on you again!!, Cairra are you listening??" Dianna squealed behind the locked door. She waited for few more minutes but it seemed cairra wasn't even listening, so she stood up and was about leaving when she heard cairra's door go open, she turned back immediately to faced cairra.

Cairra I'm so sorry" dianna pleaded while cairra stood facing her with her hands at akimbo.

"can I come in?" dianna asked again but cairra ignored her and walked back to her room leaving the door open, so dianna took her action as a yes and followed immediately. Cairra sat on the bed as she applied her lotion while dianna sat facing her. Dianna was about saying something when cairra interrupted.

Dianna can you help me out with something?" cairra asked.

"sure!! anything for a friend" dianna responded

excitedly

“Mikel was chosen as my study partner and ever since then, Mikel haven’t said anything about our projects for this semester and we’re really losing a lot of points and mikel doesn’t seem to care. And we’re also supposed to be embarking on our first wild life exploration tomorrow and I still don’t know if mikel is coming along” caira said changing into her maidens uniform.

“that isn’t a problem caira, mikel is sure coming along because my dad got his eyes on him and mikel wouldn’t wanna get on his nerves” dianna said with a smirk

“danny are you sure about this?” caira asked still not sure of what Dianna was saying.

“of cause caira, I,m very sure of what I’m saying, the nature exploration practical was my dad’s idea and he wouldn’t take any shit from mikel if he fails to attend his program” Dianna said.

“okay, I think I’ll like to inform madame Caroline about tomorrow’s practicals and also ask for some days off” caira said while Dianna nodded in affirmation.

\*\*\*\*\*

THE\_NEXT\_MORNING.

Caira packed up her things the next morning with the help of Dianna. She carried her heavy camping bag to the sitting room. when she got to the sitting room, there was still no trace of mikel, so she made up her mind that she was going to be all alone. She was about leaving when she sighted madam Caroline walking down the stairs, so she waited to greet her and also appreciate her for the sweater and sneakers she had ordered for her earlier.

“caira!! you look so good in that sweater, are you ready to go?” madam Caroline asked walking down the stairs

“yes ma’am, good morning ma’am. I received the package just this morning and I love all the dresses, thank you so much ma’am” caira said with a smile

“oh dear! I’m so glad you love them, what about mikel, I thought you guys were in the same grade and should be going together?” madam caroline asked

“uhmm....I think he'll be on his way later" caira said

"Alright dear, I'll tell the driver to drop you off, but make sure you call me if you need anything okay?" Madam Caroline said.

"Yes ma'am" caira responded.

Mrs Caroline pulled her into a warm hug while Dianna collected her camping bag and headed outside. They disengaged from the hug and caira also followed Immediately.

"I'll miss you caira" Dianna said as she gave caira a hug

"I think I'm gonna miss you more because it seems I'm all alone, Mikel isn't coming along" caira said sadly as she disengaged from the hug. caira was about leaving when she sighted Mikel walking out of the house with a maid behind him who was holding a camping bag, Dianna giggled immediately she saw Mikel coming out.

"I told you he was coming!!!" Dianna said almost in a whisper while caira let out a smile. Mikel reluctantly walked to the next car while the maid followed behind holding his bag. Caira also hopped into the car and the driver took off.

~~~~~

In no time, they arrived at school in disparities and boarded a bus to "gyeongbuk tourist attraction center". in the bus, there was only a few number of students who were present, it was obvious that the

rest of the students were able to smuggle their way out by bribing the teachers in charge. They soon arrived and stepped out of the bus and were peered to their respective team mate. A portable camera was allocated to each team to take pictures of their daily discoveries, Caira was standing all alone with her camping bag, Mikel's bag, their tent and other important stuffs that they may be needing. The load she was holding was just too much for one person and her partner wasn't even helping, there was no need for any formalities since everyone already knew that she was Mikel's maid. She was still standing alone when she sighted Zack walking towards her.

"Hey clara!! What you doing here all alone?, Or is your partner also absent today?" Zack asked advancing towards caira.

" First of all my name is caira and not Clara, and also, my partner is Mikel and his over there" caira

said pointing her index finger towards Mikel.

"Oh!!... but good thing my partner isn't present today, I can stick around you for the main time or maybe till the camping is over, that's if you don't mind" Zack said with a wink.

"Thank you Zack, but my partner and I.....

"Seriously, do you really think you have a partner, Mikel is too busy for you, can't you see that??" Zack said amidst laughter.

"By the way caira, this stuffs are just too much for a lady to carry alone, can't your *PARTNER* help you out??" Zack said sarcastically while caira got quite offended and walked away.

"I'm so sorry my lady! I don't mean to be harsh. Can I at least help you out??" Zack said running after her.

" No I don't need your help!! Leave me alone!!" Caira fired back angrily.

"Okay caira, I'll let you be but just in case you need me or Mikel bores with his cold attitude, you can always come to me" Zack said

Caira set out to work Immediately with the company for Zack. Mikel was no where to be found but that didn't stop her from completing their project. She walked round the area taking pictures of every creatures, plants and animals she found interesting. At the end of the day, they were provided a space to lay their tent and she did the arrangements with the help of Zack and just when they were almost done, Mikel appeared out of nowhere. Caira felt a bit relieved when she saw him. even though he has not been part of her project, she still felt like she had a partner. Mikel walked into their tent while caira finalized her arrangements and also went in. when Mikel saw caira, there was an awkward look on his face as his

gaze was fixed on her.

"Are we supposed to be sharing a tent??" Mikel asked calmly.

"Yes master" caira answered feeling unwelcomed.

Caira felt it'd be nice to tell him about her recent achievement since they were partners, so she brought out the camera.

"I was actually able to cover a wide range today" Caira said presenting the camera to him but he was too busy with his phone to even acknowledge that she was speaking. Caira held the camera in her hand for a while but when she saw his lack of interest towards it, she placed it down. Mikel was so cold and wasn't saying anything to her, she looked outside and saw other teams working together, it was more like a lovers retreat, there was Soo much cuddling and giggling going on outside but her partner has refused to even talk to her, if she could only get a response from him, that

will probably make her day. She decided to keep her self busy by making a coffee for herself, she brought out some beverage from the bag of snacks Mrs Caroline had given to her earlier and in no time, coffee was ready.

"Would you like to have some coffee?" Caira asked holding out a cup of coffee to Mikel but she seemed invisible to him. She was bored and needed some one to keep her company, so she decided to see Zack

"Okay, I'll be outside, if you need anything please inform me" she said and was about leaving when she heard him spoke out

"Get lost and don't ever come back" Mikel said still focused on his phone. His words hurt caira so much as she walked out quickly to avoid breaking down in tears in front of him. When she got outside, luckily she sighted Zack's tent vew metres away from hers. Zack was outside sitting around a

burning fire with some guys whom she recognized to be in the same grade with her, when they saw her walking towards Zack, they left immediately which got caira wondering why they left.

"Why did they leave??" Caira said as she advances towards Zack.

"Maybe they thought it'd be nice to give lovers some Time together" Zack said with a smirk while caira rolled her eyes and walked to sit beside him.

"Is he boring you" Zack asked while caira nodded in affirmation. Zack removed his jacket placing it around Caira's shoulders, caira was already sleepy collected the jacket and rested her head on Zack's shoulder.

It was getting to 2hours since caira left and was still not back, Mikel was about retiring to bed but he decided to find caira to be sure she's fine, not

like he actually cared but not to make him look like a bad person, he got outside and sighted caira and Zack together. At that moment, he never knew what came over him but he felt an unexplainable anger as he marched angrily towards them

"Caira, let's go!!!!" Mikel voice thundered while caira shook in fear, that was actually the first time she heard him call her by her name.

"Hey dude, we're having a good time here, you can join us if you don't mind" Zack said playfully.

"Come make me a cup of coffee!!!" Mikel said to caira

"Mikel, you and I know very well that you don't take coffee....

"It's fine Zack, I'll be back soon" caira said and was about walking away with Mikel but Zack held her tightly by her wrist.

"There's no need for that caira, you may be his

maid at home but not outdoor" Zack said dragging her back.

Mikel also got angry and tried dragging caira away but Zack's grip around her was firm. And with an unimaginable force, Mikel pushed Zack to the floor, while he came crashing down.

Tbc

My better half

(Highschool crush)

By Authoress prudence

Episode 22

Ahh!!!!!! Turn away !!!!!" Caira shouted unconsciously.

Mikel who was still in shock turned back quickly and headed straight to the exit door, he tried opening it but it was locked.

"Dianna!!! Open this door right now!!" Mikel

shouted in anger and frustration.

"You both should enjoy your self tonight, don't worry, everyone is already asleep!!" Dianna answered behind the locked door

"Damn it, Dianna!! What the hell do you want from me" Mikel asked trying to be nice.

"Nothing much!!...I just want you two to have a wonderful night rest together" Dianna said as she chuckled and walk away.

Mikel hit his hands hard against the door, he knows Dianna can be very silly most times, but she has gone too far this time around, he slowly walked to the bed and sat down angrily.

Caira stood by the bathroom door tiredly, it's been over 1hours now and Mikel was still not out of the room yet. how the hell should she go out? she wasn't still sure of what happened an hour ago, did

Mikel really see her naked or she was just hallucinating. For some reasons, she was really mad at Dianna, but at some point, she blamed her self for trusting Dianna, she knew Dianna to be very cunning and silly.

Her legs were already beginning to get weak and Mikel didn't seem like he was ready to leave, and she really needed to go back to her room. She stepped out of the bathroom and peeped to see if she would find any cloth she can use for coverage and luckily she sighted a bedsheet on the bed, but the problem was how she was going to reach it. Mikel was sitting on the bed and was in position of helping her to get the bedsheet, that was if doesn't snub her or act like a jerk.

She just have to give it a try, if he helps her with the bedsheet, good for her, but if he doesn't, then she will have to sleep in Dianna's bathroom pending when help will come.

"Mike.. young master, can you please help me get the bedsheet" caira said nervously from the bathroom

For a while, Mikel was silent and pretended like he heard no one but he suddenly dragged the bedsheet and threw it towards the bathroom door, caira heaved a sigh of relief immediately she saw the bedsheet on the bathroom door, she carefully pulled it inside inside the bathroom using her right leg. She picked it up quickly and tied it around her chest and proceeded by walking out of the bathroom with the bedsheet flowing behind her, when she got inside the room, she found Mikel sitting on the bed relaxed with the TV on, she was beginning to wonder if he was planning on sleeping in Dianna's room, she walked closer to him while his eyes remained fixed on the program he was watching.

"Thank you....for helping me out the the bedsheet"

caira said looking down.

"Move away from the TV" Mikel said coldly.

"Oh, I'm sorry" caira said. She didn't even realize that she was standing in front of the TV, anyways, she slowly moved away to enable Mikel have a better view of what he was watching.

"I'll take my leave now" caira said but Mikel ignored her.

She walked straight to the door and turned the door knob but it wasn't opening. she tried opening it again But it wasn't,

"why was the door locked?" She said to her self. she over heard Mikel asking Dianna to open the door, could it be possible that Dianna also locked the door?

Caira stood by the door contemplating on what to do next, she was still standing when Mikel suddenly turned down the volume of the TV and

faced her. she looked down and held the bedsheet tightly to her chest immediately she felt him starring at her.

"Come have a sit" Mikel said but caira stood still.

"Thank you, but I'm fine standing" caira answered with her gaze on the floor

"I don't care to know what kind of game you and Dianna are playing, but I just hope you don't get on my nerves" Mikel said calmly and increased the volume of the TV and acted like nothing happened.

Caira simply walked to the other side of the bed and sat uncomfortably, she scoured her eyes around the room in search of Dianna's clothes but there wasn't any. Her wardrobe was empty and left open, she felt so stupid for trusting Dianna. It was already 1:00am and everyone was already asleep except for she and Mikel, she was already beginning to doze off, but she wasn't comfortable sleeping while Mikel was still awake. Mikel was

seated at the right edge of the bed while she was at the left, she felt the distance between them was enough, so she rested her legs on the bed and laid her head on the bed and joined Mikel in watching the show until she unconsciously fell asleep.

The_next_morning

Caira woke up by the sound of a loud knock on the door, she opened her eyes slightly and turned around, she found Mikel still asleep. she touched her back to confirm if the bed sheet was still tight and intact and good thing it was. It seems to her that Mikel wasn't the kind of guy that takes advantage of a lady at any slight opportunity. She sat up and just when she was about answering, the knock came again, this time Mikel woke up. The door immediately opened revealing Dianna's smiley face with angry Zoey behind her. Caira's face crumbled up in a frown immediately she saw

Dianna, she stood up in rage and stormed out of the room pushing Dianna out of the way, but Dianna ran after her happily.

"Caira wait!!!, How was it!!" Dianna asked running after her, caira got to her door and was about entering when Dianna caught up with her.

"I'm so sorry caira, but how was it??" Dianna asked hold the door to prevent caira from shutting it.

"How was what!!" Caira answered angrily.

"Uhhh... did he... touch you?? You know, I didn't hear any sound last night, so I just wanted to be sure if....

Caira shut the door at Dianna's face angrily, while Dianna was still talking.

"Good morning Mikel, Zack is in your room and he'll like to see you" Zoey said reluctantly.

"I'll be there in 10 minutes" Mikel said sitting up.

"What happened between you and that maid yesterday" Zoey asked with a frown.

"You can inform Zack that I'll be there in 10 minutes" Mikel repeated again.

"Mikel, I really think it's unnecessary for you to bring your self so low for an ordinary maid, I am always here.....

"Enough Zoey!!, Leave Dianna's room before she gets back, you know she doesn't like you" Mikel said walking out of the room

Mikel walked out of the room leaving Zoey all alone, and just when he was about going to meet Zack, he sighted Dianna at Caira's door, he walked quietly to her and got hold of her hand, Dianna flinched in fear immediately she saw Mikel, she had almost forgot that she and Mikel still have an unfinished business to settle.

"Hey bro!! What's popping" Dianna said laughing nervously and attempting to free herself from Mikel's tight grip around her hand.

"Where is the video??" Mikel asked trying to control his temper.

"What are you talking about, I don't have any video, maybe...."

Mikel held Dianna's ears, pulling it hard while Dianna winced in pain.

"Aww!!!! The camera is in the kitchen cabinet!!" Dianna said walking to the kitchen while Mikel held her hands tightly to make sure she doesn't escape. When Dianna got to the kitchen, she opened the cabinet and brought out a small camera and handed it over to mikel. He collected it and tried switching it on but it seemed to be dead.

"You see, I told you I don't have any video, the camera is fake, I got it from the kids toy store, now

can you please let go of my hands now?" Dianna said with a pout

"Mikel's hands dropped in shock while Dianna took the opportunity to escape,..so, all this while, he have been running after a fake camera!!

He crashed the camera on the ground disappointedly, he couldn't believe that Dianna got him again.

Zoey dashed into her room angrily as she hit her hands hard against her dressing mirror while it came crashing down. She have always knew that the new maid will be a big problem between she and Mikel, but she wasn't going to sit and watch any girl destroy all what she have worked for.

"Prepare to leave this mansion Cairra, either dead or alive!!!" Zoey said with her hands terribly shaking.

TBC.

My better half

highschool crush

By authoress prudence

Episode 24

Zack grunted as he stood up , there was a look of surprise on his face as he stared intensely at mikel, that had never happened before, ever since he knew mikel. he couldn't understand his action that evening.

“what the fuck mikel!!!, what was that for!!!” zack said getting up, while mikel turned away quickly,he felt a bit guilty for his action, but being the kind of person he was, he never thought it was necessary to apologize.

“mikel, you know what? I really think you should stop being a boring person, you behave so cold and snobbishly but still expect people to be

around you, if you ain't gonna talk to her, then let her find someone else to talk to.... It's just an advice man” zack said.

Caira felt sorry for zack and thought it will be necessary to apologize since everything happened because of her.

“ I'm so sorry zack, I'll come see you later” caira said feeling guilty but she only got a hard stare from mikel.

“ not even in your next life are you allowed to come back here again” Mikel said as he dragged caira away. When they got back to their tent, mikel let go of her hands and had his sit while caira rushed to make him a cup of coffee before he gets angry and yells at her again.

Soon, She was done making the coffee and served it in a mug. she carefully walked to mikel to give him the coffee.

“here is your coffee master” she said handing over the cup of coffee to him but she caught mikel staring at her intensely, he kept a blank expression as he stared, making it difficult for caira to be able to detect if she was doing it the wrong way.

“uhmm...your coffee is ready” she said still holding the coffee, but mikel only stared on without saying a word. Caira was beginning to feel sweaty and uncomfortable, she felt their tent becoming too tight and hot for her as her hands were already beginning to shake, so she dropped the coffee on her table immediately to avoid spilling the coffee on his body. At the process of dropping the mug on the table, the glass made a clinking sound which brought mikel out of his thought.

“was he saying the truth?” mikel asked with his eyes fixed on caira.

“I...don't get it, who are you talking about?” caira asked confused

“i’m I really boring and too dull” mikel asked. Caira felt goosebump all over her, she never thought he would be affected by what Zack said about him. She was speechless and didn’t know how to answer him.

“I asked a question” mikel stated, bringing caira out of her thought

“uhmm....i” caira was still trying to explain her self when she heard someone called from outside their tent, she heaved a sigh of relief and rushed to check who it was, she never really know who it was but who ever that person was, he was really a savior to her. When she got outside, she sighted janelle standing outside. her face crumbled immediately she saw janelle as the memory of how she humiliated her came flashing in her mind, janelle face equally crumbled up in a frown immediately she sighted caira.

“what do you want again?” caira said with a frown.

“get out of my sight bitch” janelle said pushing caira out of the way and making her way into Mikel's tent, while caira followed immediately. When janelle got inside the tent, she let out a sheepish smile as she sighted mikel.

“Hey mikel!! i'd like to have a word with you *privately*” janelle said looking at caira, while caira left almost immediately, she fervently wished that janelle spends more time inside, so she can have more time to think about the perfect answer to mikel's question.

~~~~~

“ Look mikel, I know it isn't really easy being stuck with someone you loathe, but this is the condition everyone found them self. But it isn't any big deal, she being your partner doesn't actually mean you guys have to be together all the time. You can also hangout with someone else right?” janelle said while mikel stared coldly at her without saying

anything for a while until he was fed up with her presence in his room.

“ is that why you're here?” mikel said to janelle

“ye...s, is there anything you want us to talk about? You know, I'm less busy right.....

“send for caira on your way out of my tent” mikel interrupted her. Janelle knew fully well that mikel was asking her out, so she stood up immediately and left begrudgingly, she knew mikel to be very hardened and not easily convinced. She walked out hesitantly and found caira sitting all alone close to the tent. The sight of caira alone annoyed her as she clenched her fist in anger, she never blamed mikel for his actions but she blamed caira, if not for the fact that she was sharing a tent with mikel, she would have probably set her tent on fire, not like she actually wanted her dead, no it hasn't gotten to that yet, but just to give her an ugly scare on her beautiful face that will keep mikel from her.

kindly hi novelsrepublic on WhatsApp on plus two three four eight zero five five eight eight nine one right three to get added to the novels group

Caira sighted janelle walking out, so she went back to the tent. when she got inside, she found mikel lying with his eyes closed, she wasn't really sure if he was asleep but all thanks to janelle. She quickly changed to her nighties and walked to the edge of the tent to also have a night rest.

#### THE\_NEXT\_MORNING

Caira turned uncomfortably to the other side of the bed, and gradually, she opened her eyes. it was another day again. She looked around but couldn't find Mikel in the room, "where could he have gone this early" she said within herself. Anyways, that was an opportunity for her to apologize to Zack. She hurriedly changed her nighties to something more decent. When she got outside the tent, she was surprised to see a few number of girls

perambulating with just a towel on, she was quite curious and decided to ask what was going on.

"Hi.... can you spare me some of your time?" She asked some group of girls who got a towel tied above their chest.

"Yes" one of the girls answered.

"I don't really get what's going on, why....."

"There is a little stream over there where all the girls take their bath" one of the girls interrupted rudely as they all left immediately. Caira stood surprised by the girls attitude towards her. well, she wouldn't really blame her much because it was all Janelle's fault, Janelle made her look like no body in front of the whole school. She watched on as the girl walked away, then she finally decided to go see Zack before Mikel gets back.

When she approached Zack's tent, she knocked and went in at his approval.



"Good morning Zack" caira said making her way into Zack's tent.

"Hey beautiful!!" Zack cooed in his usual jovial tone.

"Uhhh, I'm Soo sorry for what happened last night, it....."

"It's okay sweetie, it's not your fault. i think I know what's happening to mikel" Zack said wrapping his hands round caira's waist.

"What's wrong with him?" Caira asked

"I think he's falling in love" Zack said.

"With who??" Caira asked almost in a whisper

"With you, but he still doesn't understand what he's feelings" Zack said while caira furrowed her eye brows in disbelief.

"Look caira, I know this sounds ridiculous but...."

"It doesn't sound ridiculous, it is ridiculous. That's

the dumbest thing I've ever heard you say. Mikel hates me, don't you see that? Don't you see the rage in his eyes whenever he addresses me?" Caira said.

"Believe me or not caira, I know what I'm saying, Mik.....

"Whatever Zack, I just hope that someday you grow more wiser than this. I'll be on my way" caira said with a smile as she left Zack's tent. She ran hurriedly back to her tent silently praying that Mikel would not still be back. When she approached her tent, she walked in immediately only to see Mikel waiting with a blank expression on his face.

"Hi...uhmm...go-od morning, I've been looking everywhere for.....

"Where have you been, I've been here for over 10 minutes" Mikel said interrupting caira calmly.

Caira felt a loud this in her heart, she so much blamed Zack for wasting her time on meaningless talk.

"I went to see...a friend" caira lied

"And who was that?" Mikel asked.

"Janelle" caira lied. She has spent almost a month in C.H.S. but unfortunately, she was only privilege have known Janelle's name.

"Pack up my things right away, we'll be leaving" Mikel said.

"Am So sorry, I went to apologise to Zack on your behalf....."

"Did I ever say I feel sorry for what happened yesterday?" Mikel said with a Stern look.

"I Know I'm wrong, but can we just stay and finish the project?" Caira said in regret while Mikel ignored her and picked up his phone.

"You can go without me, I'm not leaving!!!" The word escaped Caira's lips as she turned and stormed out. When she got outside, to her outmost surprise, she saw everyone packing up their bags and vacating the camp.

She stared on with a confused expression, "what was making everyone leave when the camp when it hwas not yet over?" she asked within herself. At that moment, many questions was running through her mind but luckily, she sighted Miss Bianca walking towards her, so she decided to ask her.

"Ma'am, I don't understand what's going on, why is everyone leaving? I thought we were supposed to be spending 7 days here" caira asked eagerly.

"Yes miss caira. unfortunately, we received series of reports on rape, some students falling sick, and some involved in immoral act and this is just the day one of the camping, so we were asked to leave

before it gets out of hand". Miss Bianca said with a bright smile.

"Oh!!! Ok ma'am" caira said. She felt foolish and disappointed in her self. she had acted so foolishly and rashly in front of Mikel. How would she even manage to face him.

\*\*\*\*\*

Caira and Mikel arrived home that same day, Dianna was so excited as she followed caira into her room, she was so curious about knowing how the camping went and how caira and her brother were able to cope together.

Mikel walked to his room tiredly, he took off his shirt and just when he was about resting, he heard his door go open, revealing Zoey who was almost naked. She walked seductively into his room while Mikel let out a re-assuring smirk . Zoey knew mikel was in the mood, so she let the towel fall freely from her body and walked to him.

Zoey took his lips slowly in attempt to kiss him but Mikel turned her away to face the table. he ripped off her underthings and brought out his hard erected d!ck, and just when he was about going into her. She stopped him.

Wait!!!" Zoey said turning to face Mikel who was looking impatient.

"What the hell do you want Zoey!!" Mikel asked impatiently.

"Nothing much, I just want a favor from you" Zoey said trailing her fingers down his chest.

"Name it" mikel said losing his patients.

"Fire her first!!!" Zoey said with a smirk.

TBC.

my better half

Hightschool crush.

By authoress prudence

## Episode 25

"Fire her first!!!" Zoey said with a smirk.

"Who do you want me to fire, name it and it's done" Mikel said with a serious look.

"The new maid" Zoey said happily, but Mikel's gaze lowered. Immediately she made mention of the new maid. He knew exactly who Zoey was talking about but he decided to ask her for clarification purpose.

"Who's that" Mikel asked reluctantly.

"Caira!!" Zoey said trailing her fingers up to Mikel's face and expecting a positive answer but Mikel suddenly got hold of her hands and brought it down from his face.

"I can't fire her" Mikel said withdrawing from her and walking back to his bed while Zoey stood gobsmacked.

"Why?" Zoey asked still in shock, she was sure that

she had gotten Mikel at the right time and at his present condition, he could give her anything in the world just to cool down his sexual urge.

"Because I didn't hire her" Mikel said simply.

"Bu..t, you can just frame her or tell your mom that you don't like her and she would fire her" Zoey yelled in disappointment.

"You can do that Zoey, you're free to frame her" Mikel uttered coldly while Zoey clenched her fist in anger.

"If you have no more request, then you are free to leave, you've ruined my mood" Mikel said again.

"I'm sorry, can we just continue from where we stop?" Zoey said walking back to Mikel.

"Get out Zoey, or else I'll be forced to call the guards on you" Mikel said while Zoey picked up her clothes and hesitantly walked out. She knew that Mikel was in position of firing the new maid but she



just couldn't get why he didn't want to fire her.

\*\*\*\*\*

Immediately Zoey left, Mikel hit his hands against the wall disappointedly. He was really hard and erected and that bitch ruined everything. Why was Zoey such an ass hole, why must she bring up an impossible request at that very crucial moment??, He was in position of firing caira but he just didn't know why he couldn't get him self to do it. At that moment, many questions kept running through his mind coupled with the pressing urge that was caused by Zoey's stupidity.

He picked up his phone hesitantly and dialed Zack's number, he must admit, Zack had been part of him and he just can't afford to keep him away. he dialed Zack's number and he picked up at the first beep.

"Hey!! Look who's finally calling, don't tell me you need me again after all the....."

"Zack send for a bitch to my mansion right away"  
Mikel said interrupting Zack rudely.

"Alright whatever, who exactly?" Zack asked

"Any high class hot bitch" Mikel said

"Be specific dude. You've got Soo many bitches,  
Janelle, Chile, Naomi, Zoey or even caira" Zack  
said playfully.

"Send for anyone of them" Mikel said as he ended  
the call.

\*\*\*\*\*

Dianna was in caira's room, she was really  
engrossed in the discussion, caira was narrating  
how terrible her experience with Mikel was for only  
a day and what Zack said about Mikel.

"Did Zack really Said that to you?" Dianna asked.

"Yeah, really dumb right?" Caira asked.

"Of course not, I think the only one dumb here is

you, you are so dumb to even realize that Mikel is falling in love with you" Dianna said while caira's face crumbled up in a frown

"Really?you also agree with Zack??? Why is everyone around me suddenly going nuts!!" Caira said in bemusement while Dianna laughed out loud.

"Oh caira, guess who's birthday it is in 5 days!?" Dianna said almost In a scream

"Who?" Caira asked.

"Mikel!!!, Mikel's birthday is in 5 days and mom promise to hire the world best chef to make the dishes!!! Oh my goodness, you really need to taste chef Maangchi's dishes, it's really glorious!!, I've been sending invitation cards to some of my friends, but there is no way am inviting Janelle and her crew, those girls are bad news." Dianna said while Caira nodded uninterested

"Okay caira, you have to get him a present, so what are you getting him?" Dianna asked in excitement while caira let out a shy smile.

\*\*\*\*\*

Mikel walked straight to the bathroom to wash off while the bitch put on her clothes and left immediately. Soon, he stepped out of the bathroom with a towel tied around his waist, his hair and entire body was dripping wet, giving him an extremely hot look. He towel dried his body and put on an inner wear. He was still dressing up when he heard a knock on the door.

"Come in?" Mikel Said with a low voice. He was actually expecting Zack but the door opened revealing caira. she walked in nervously with her gaze on the floor, she was trying hard not to look at his exposed chest but her curiosity failed her as her gaze moved to his tempting body and then back to the floor.

"Good day master" caira said with a bow.

"What do you want?" Mikel asked

"I was asked to clean up your room, but I can see you are really busy, I'll just come back later" caira said in discomfort and turned back in attempt to leave the room but Mikel called her attention.

"Wait, you can start now" Mikel said while caira furrowed her brow in surprise, there was something about him that evening, he was a lot nicer than the Mikel she knew.

"Oh, okay then" caira replied and set to work and occasionally stealing glances at mikel as he dressed up

Mikel kept trying on different clothes, not knowing exactly what to wear, but he finally settled for a black trousers and a white turtle neck shirt and top it up with a red jacket. He then proceeded by picking up his shoe. he was about putting on his

shoe when he discovered that the shoe was a bit dusty.

"Pick up that shoe and clean it up" Mikel said with an authoritative voice.

"I'm really busy right now, I'll just call the laundry man to get it done for you" caira said and was about walking out when Mikel called back her attention.

" I am aware that there is a laundry man in this mansion but i want you to do it yourself" Mikel said while caira reluctantly walked back to get the shoe. she polished it nice and clean and dropped it at Mikel's foot.

"Here you go sir" caira said as she dropped the shoe and went back to cleaning. But Mikel called her back almost immediately.

"Turn on the hair dryer and dry my hair" Mikel said throwing a dryer on the bed while caira growled

silently as picked up the dryer and walked to Mikel. She turned on the dryer and stood still, not knowing if she was permitted to touch his hair.

"What are you still looking at, get it done immediately, I don't have all the time in the world" Mikel said to caira. Caira hesitated for a while but when she saw how serious he was, she set to work immediately. She reluctantly placed her hands on his soft hair and directed the dryer to his hair. The soft texture of his hair felt really good. she finalized her job as she applied some hair treatments on his hair and comb through it.

"i'm done sir" caira said tiredly while Mikel nodded in approval.

Caira picked up the mop to continue her work but she heard her name again, it was the annoying pumpkin face again.

"Yes sir" caira answered exhaustedly.

"Find my car key Mikel" Mikel said to caira who was already getting mad.

Caira turned around only to find the key on his drawer, she knew that Mikel was intentionally doing everything to frustrate her. She handed over the key to him and was about picking up her mop when she heard her name for the umpteenth time, But this time, she got paranoid and screamed unconsciously.

"What have I ever done to you Mikel!!!?" Caira asked forgetting that she was instructed not to call him by his name. By the time she realized, it was already too late.

TBC

UNEDITED

my better half

Hightschool crush

By authoress prudence



## Episode 26

Mikel eyes equally glinted when he heard her scream his name out.

Caira instantly realized what she've done, so she fell on her knees to ask for mercy

"I'm so sorry, I never meant to be disres.....

"Get up and leave, send for another maid on your way out" Mikel interrupted rudely while caira stood up and left almost Immediately.

Mikel smiled to him self after Caira had left. He didn't know why he did what he did but he guess he love the look on her face whenever she's mad.

5\_DAYS\_LATER.

Mikel was still in bed when Dianna walked into his room holding a bottle of water. She quietly unsealed the bottle and splashed the water on Mikel's face. Mikel who was still sleeping woke up immediately.

"What the hell, Dianna!!!" Mikel said sitting up.

"Happy birthday sleepy head!!!" Dianna screamed excitedly. yes, it was Mikel's 20th birthday but sadly it was being celebrated at the mansion because of the presence of mikel's Dad.

"OMG!!! Mikel you need to see the interior and exterior decorations, the kitchen is So busy!!! I was also oppoertuned to have the world's best chef autograph on my favorite mug!!!" Dianna said holding out a pink mug.

"I'm so excited! You really need to come down to the kitchen and perceive the aroma of the spicy chicken, hangover stew, noodles.....

"Dianna" Mikel interrupted Dianna who was talking rather too much

"Yes birthday boy!!!" Dianna replied playfully.

"Can you please give me a break? I wouldn't wanna develop a headache today" Mikel said

"Alright bro, see you downstairs!!" Dianna said walking out of Mikel's room.

Immediately Dianna left, Mikel took his phone only to see so many birthday text by both familiar and unknown persons. He steadily stepped down from his bed and headed downstairs. When he got down stairs, he was surprised to find out that the entire house was already decorated, he felt it was rather too early for all the preparations because the party was taking place around 6:00pm that evening. He sighted his mom who was too busy coordinating to even notice that he was awake, he felt a little bit restricted and wasn't moved by his birthday arrangements because he had actually planned on having his birthday celebrated outside the city but the presence of his Dad ruined everything.

\*\*\*\*\*

Caira was in the kitchen assisting the chefs who were hired to cook, there wasn't much job to do as

the chef had already taken over all the activities of the kitchen. She still found it hard to believe that all the arrangements was just because of one person. She stood for a while in until she saw that her service was no longer needed so she headed to Dianna's room. She approached Dianna's room and opened the door, she sighted Dianna trying on a dress.

"Oh!! good thing you're here caira, what do you think of this dress?" Dianna asked turning around for caira to get a better view of the dress.

"I think it's really nice on you" caira complimented with a smile.

"Thank you caira, mom also got you this, try it on" Dianna said handing over a beautiful dress to caira.

Kindly Hi NovelsRepublic on +2348055889183 on WhatsApp to get added to our novels group and get PDF links

"What's the dress for?" Caira asked perplexed.

"It's for the party tonight, don't you like it?" Dianna asked

"I love it but...is this what the maids will be wearing tonight" caira asked.

"Of course not caira, this dress is specially for you, the maids will be on their uniform" Dianna said.

"Uhhh... thanks a lot for the dress but I think I'd rather be on my maiden's uniform" caira said.

"Why caira" Dianna asked with a pout.

"Obviously because I'm also a maid" caira said.

"But mom said you should attend the party"  
Dianna squealed while caira left immediately to escape answering her.

\*\*\*\*\*

"Hey dude, it's been days since we spoke, I haven't been seeing you around, are you coming over

tonight?" Mikel asked Zack over the phone.

"Really, it's also been days since you embarrassed me in front of caira, have you forgotten??" Zack answered.

"Don't tell me you haven't been coming over because of that" Mikel said calmly.

"Well, I'm telling you now, I haven't been coming around because of that" Zack answered over the phone.

"Alright, I'm sorry, is that all you wanna hear?" Mikel asked.

"Yeah, I guess that's all I wanted to hear, I'll be there soon!!!" Zack said as he hang off.

Mikel heaved a sigh of relief immediately he ended the call, the birthday party has started but it was obviously gonna be boring, so he needed someone to keep him company to while away time. He never wanted to attend the party but the thought of his

mother's efforts made him to, he was not ready to hurt his mother's feelings because she is sure gonna be disappointed when she hears that he absent himself on his own birthday party.

.....

The maids rushed as they arranged the meals on the table, so many special guest of honor were present, it was 6:34pm and the party had already kicked off. Dianna was dressed in a long red beautiful gown and was accompanied to her seat by two maids. Caira was amidst the maids who served the dishes. Almost all the invited guest had arrived but Mikel was still in his room with Zack.

While in Mikel's room, Mikel dressed up in a black suit while Zack stared in amazement.

"Wow Mikel, you look....."

"How do I look?" Mikel asked.

"You look really responsible, all thanks to Mr

camford" Zack said with a chuckle while Mikel walked out of the room partially angry.

Caira was busy serving dishes to some of the guest when she sighted Mikel walking in alongside Zack, every one turned around to have a look at him.

When he stepped in there was this aura that surrounded him. "He was such a god in everything" caira thought to her self. she had almost started drooling when she suddenly remembered that she was in public, so she got hold of her self. Mikel walked steadily to his seat while Zack sat close to him.

Few minutes after Mikel stepped in, caira also sighted Janelle and her crew walking in. she knew that Dianna never invited her but she had came for some reasons best known to her. She was also dressed half naked, caira felt the urge to go into hiding but there was no point in hiding since the secret was already out, Janelle was free to take



more embarrassing pictures of her. Janelle also seemed to have noticed caira's presence, so she walked quickly to caira and took a seat on the table caira had served on. Caira got alarmed immediately Janelle walked past her to take her sit on a table which was prepared for a very important guest.

"Janelle, I'm not tryna be rude but I think you should find your self another seat, this table was prepared specifically for senator Wilson, you can find his name tag at the back of the seat, I wouldn't want you to risk my job, please" caira pleaded with Janelle who sat comfortable.

"Oh my goodness!!! Why didn't you tell me earlier? So you mean this drink is also for senator Wilson right?" Janelle asked sarcastically.

"Yes, everything you see on this table was specially arranged for.....

Caira was cut short when she suddenly felt cold

liquid running down from her hair to her face, Janelle had poured the drink on her!!. Janelle let out a smile of satisfaction while her friends laughed out loud.

"Janelle!! How dare...."

"Say one more word again and I'll make sure you loose your job here!!" Janelle threatened while caira clamped her mouth shut.

"Good girl, now clean up this mess" Janelle said as she walked away with her friends behind her.

Caira couldn't help but cry silently, does she really deserve all this humiliation just because she's not from a rich home?. She stood at the same spot for a pretty long time until she finally decided to get a mob and Clean up Janelle's mess.

Mikel and Zack sat watching the show, Mikel knew that the birthday was gonna be the most absurd party he have ever attended. He was already fed

up with the party and didn't know how to leave without anyone's notice. He decided to keep himself busy by drinking, he picked up a bottle of alcoholic wine and was about opening it when Zack stopped him.

"Do you have any idea what that wine is?" Zack said snatching the bottle from Mikel's grip.

"Just a bottle of wine" Mikel said as he snatched the bottle back from Zack.

"According to my knowledge about wine, I think this is VODKA, it was shipped all the way from India and it's damn expensive. It is highly alcoholic and can intoxicate in less than 10 minutes after consumption" Zack explained while Mikel let out a smirk, he was actually looking for a perfect excuse to leave the party. He unsealed the bottle and poured a large quantity of the drink into a glass and gulped everything down, he did that repeatedly while Zack watched in astonishment.

"Zack, take me back to my room once I get drunk" Mikel said gulping down almost half of the bottle, Zack watched as Mikel almost emptied the entire bottle of wine until he noticed that he was completely drunk. Zack crossed Mikel's right hand across his shoulder and led him to his room while Mikel staggered all the way.

"Dude, you're really heavy, you shouldn't have drunk so much" Zack complained as he walked up the stairs with mikel. Zack was equally exhausted and needed a reliever and fortunately for him, he sighted caira walking down the stairs with a tray of cookies.

"Hey caira, your boss drank too much and his really drowsy, please walk him back to his room, I'll help you with the tray" Zack said collecting the tray of cookies from caira and walking away quickly before she said anything.

Caira was now left with mikel who was times her

weight, she crossed his left hand over her shoulder and walked him to his room, it wasn't really easy but she finally arrived at his room. She placed him to lie on his bed carefully and was about walking out when she felt his grip around her wrist.

"What else can I do for you?" Caira asked

"Help me up, I'll like to use the bathroom first" Mikel said. Caira walked him to the bathroom and was about turning back to leave when she felt him drag her back and pushed her against the bathroom wall, he placed his right hand high above her head and used left hand to grab her waist. He then placed his lips on her lips. caira's eyes widened in shock when she felt Mikel's lips on hers, she got lost In the feelings and couldn't help but make use of the opportunity, she had always wanted to kiss his attractive lips. Mikel trailed his hands down to her butt and grabbed it roughly, caira could see the look in his eyes, he was

obviously drunk. Suddenly caira realized she was committing an offence by taking advantage of his drunken state.

"I'm so sorry master, you're drunk, I need to put you to bed now" caira said as she freed her self from his grips but Mikel pulled her closer to his body and whispered to her ears softly.

"I'm not drunk Zoey, I want you badly.....  
and I want you right now"

TBC

My better half

Highschool crush

By AUTHORESS prudence.

Episode 27

"I'm not drunk Zoey, I want you badly.....

and I want you right now" mikel mumbled as he placed his lips on hers again. Caira couldn't help

but take his lips also and kissed him passionately, at that point, caira wasn't sure if she wanted him to stop or not, she got lost in the feelings and moved her both hands to the back of his hair. Mikel trailed his left hand under her short maiden's uniform and ripped off her panties, he held her up and placed her on the bathroom wash-hand basin while she sat facing him with her legs spread apart. He proceeded by slipping his fingers in between her legs using his fingers to rub her clit, she flinched when she felt his hands in her sensitive organ and bite her lips to prevent her self from moaning out loud. Mikel steadily pushed in two fingers into her Honeypot and this time, a soft moan escaped her lips. He hungrily tore her light maiden uniform apart, making her almost naked, the only thing shielding her was her red bra, but he moved his hands to her back and unhooked her bra and her big boobs came bouncing out. Mikel slowly reached for one of her legs and raised it up,

placing it besides his ribs, he moved his lips from her lips down to her neck and kissed her passionately, cutting deep into the hollows of her neck. He proceeded by moving his lips down to her chest and then her left breast, taking her nipples into his mouth and sucked it passionately like his life depends on it, the feelings was crazy, it was something caira had never felt for quite a long time, she was unconsciously moaning out and was completely wet as she held mikel's collar tightly and pulling his head closer to her chest. Mikel was completely aroused, he used his right hand to fondle with her nipple and using the other hand, he quickly unbuckled his trousers and his hard erected d!ck was unveiled. Caira opened her eyes slightly and was terrified by the sight in front of her, things was really moving too fast and she didn't like where it was heading to but she just couldn't resist him.

"Mas...ter, wait... we're ....doing the wrong thing."



Caira managed to say amidst moans, but Mikel simply pushed his d!ck inside her tight hole while caira let at a painful cry, he went further by pushing it more deep into her while caira held on to his collar tightly, he held her up and placed her in the bathtub, he continued by thrusting in and out of her roughly, caira's soft moans filled the bathroom, mikel kept pushing in and out of her while she moaned out in pain and in pleasure.

"Mik..el...uhhhh..... stop it.. right now" caira said as she held him close to her body, she wasn't quite sure of what she was asking him to do because she was holding onto him tightly and wasn't ready to let go. Mikel moved his hand to her breast and gave it a light pinch on her nipple while she flinched in pain. He proceeded by fondling with her nipples while caira moaned louder. He sat on the toilet seat and placed her on his lap, making sure that she was completely facing him. he worked on her body while caira moved her hands into his soft

hair. He held her up again, regardless of her weight and took her back to the room and laid her down on the bed, he then re-inserted his d!ck into her and pushed in with so much force and pressure while caira grasp the sheet tight. They both had a rough sex that night until they both fell asleep.

### THE\_NEXT\_MORNING

Caira woke up by the the sun rays flashing on her face, she felt worked up and pains all over her body, particularly in between her legs, she struggled to sit up just to discover that she wasn't in her room, not only that but she was completely naked and was being covered with a dulvet. She watched in shock trying to figure out how she ended up naked, she was still lost in thought when she sighted Mikel walking out of the bathroom, immediately she set her eyes on him, memories of their intercourse came flashing into her mind, her lips fell partly open when she fully remembered

that they had sex. She watched in astonishment as Mikel walked closer to her, a careless tear also came rolling down her cheek.

"Mike...I did it really happened??" Caira asked but mikel only stared directly at her, not knowing what to say.

"Answer me!!!" Caira said aloud.

"Caira, ... I'm sorry" Mikel managed to say.

"For what exactly" caira asked in tears, not quite sure of the reason he was apologising

"Caira, I was drunk last night, I wasn't in my senses..but...I promise to make it up to you" Mikel said almost in a whisper as he tried to get hold of her hand but caira moved it away quickly.

"Make it up to me?...in what way" caira said as more tears came rushing down but mikel walked to his drawer and brought out a huge bundle of money and then dropped it on the bed but caira

simply stared at the money for a long time, not knowing what it was for.

"What's this for?" She asked holding the duvet tightly to her body.

"It's for your troubles" Mikel stated looking directly at her, but caira only laughed sarcastically and in tears.

"You Know, I don't really blame you for anything, you rich people always think you can have anything and anyone you want at anytime with the power of money. After all, you're the boss and influential one while I am the unfortunate victim here!!, That was exactly the same thing you did at the mall!!!" Caira said amidst tears.

"I'm sorry" Mikel said again while caira got paranoid and left the money on the bed with the duvet around her, she was about leaving when she realized that she couldn't leave with a duvet around her chest, she needed to put on her clothes.

"Where are my clothes" Caira asked trying so hard to control her temper but mikel wasn't answering her, so she decided to check for it in the bathroom.

She got inside the bathroom only to find her clothes shredded into pieces and lying on the floor, she let out a silent cry and sat hopelessly on the bathroom floor. She was still sitting on the floor when mikel walked in with one of his shirt and offered to give it to her.

"Here, take this" mikel said handing over the shirt over to her, caira not knowing what else to do, collected the shirt hesitantly and and changed into it. mikel quickly turned around and left the bathroom, giving her some privacy. when she was done changing, she walked out with the oversized shirt and a ruffled hair, she stared directly at Mikel for a while and turned back to leave. She was about turning the door knob when Mikel spoke out again.

"Wait!!" Mikel said and caira paused to hear him out.

"I'm deeply sorry caira, I Never intended to hurt you, I promise, this will never happen again and I promise to make it up to you in a Better way" Mikel said while caira turned the door knob and ran out in tears.

TBC

My better half

Highschool crush

By AUTHORESS prudence

Episode 28

Dianna sat in caira's room talking all along, while caira sat holding a teddy. She was lost in thought and wasn't listening to Dianna's conversation.

"Oh oh oh!!! And again, today, a boy in my class told me that he likes me and would like us to date"

Dianna said.

"Guess what I told him?" Dianna asked but there was no response from caira.

"I told him that, I don't like him, he asked me why and I said \*the only thing I love in this world is chocolate, but if he was a chocolate, I would probably have date him\* isn't that hilarious!?" Dianna said as she laughed at her own lame jokes.

"Caira!! Isn't it funny?" Dianna asked again but caira was still lost in thought.

"Caira, you ain't listening!!, Caira!!!" Dianna yelled and this time caira flinched in shock and responded.

"What?" Caira asked finally recovering.

"I've been talking for over 10 minutes, don't tell me you weren't listening." Dianna asked.

"I was, I..."

"Caira, there is something different about you this evening, you are obviously lost in thought. So tell me, what were you thinking about." Dianna asked.

"Nothing serious Dianna" caira replied with a sigh.

"You can't tell me that, I can see the restless look on your face, c'mon caira, tell me, I might probably be able to help" Dianna said

"Nothing Danny, absolutely nothing....."

"Is it about Mikel? Is he getting on your nerves again?" Dianna interrupted, immediately Dianna mentioned Mikel's name, caira's eyes dilated in shock.

"Ah ha!!! I knew I was Mikel, that boy is such a jerk, he only derives pleasure in bullying others, But I hope you don't really mind him caira, Mikel wasn't like this before, he use to be a very jovial and friendly person, but all of a sudden, he started being a jerk in his late 17's, nobody knew what



changed him. But don't worry caira, I'll give a piece of my mind" Dianna said and was about leaving the bed when caira stopped her.

"No Dianna, this isn't about Mikel, I guess I'm home sick and I miss my mum" caira said with a sniff.

" c'mon caira, you can't be home sick right?, .. I'm here for you, we can even go out and have fun again if you like" Dianna said

"Thank you Danny, but I think I'll like to be alone for now" caira said while Dianna nodded in affirmation and left.

Immediately Dianna left, caira let tears fall freely down her cheek, she felt so terrible, she didn't even know who to put the blame on. was it her fault or Mikel's fault? But Mikel didn't force her to do it, he only touched her and she succumbed to his touch. She had the opportunity to resist him but she didn't, she allowed stupidity to take over

her. She never really know why she blamed Mikel, but she guess she only needed someone to unleash her frustration on, which she did and was still not satisfied. She didn't even know how she was supposed to face Mikel after their intercourse last night, there was every possibility that things will never be the same again after what happened between them, she stood up and headed to the bathroom to wash her face only to find her contraceptive pills lying carelessly on the floor, she quickly picked it up and hid it in her box, good thing Dianna never saw it, or else she would have clouded her with millions of questions.

\*\*\*\*\*

"Wait Mikel, are you serious??" Zack asked still in shock while Mikel sat in silence.

"Why would you do that?" Zack asked still not sure of what Mikel told him.

"Like I said Zack, I was drunk, and wasn't in my

right senses!!!" Mikel said almost in a whisper.

They were still discussing when Dianna barged into Mikel's room rudely.

"Mikel, why are you such a jerk!!! Why did you do it" Dianna asked and Mikel turned in shock.

"What do you mean Dianna, what did caira tell you" Mikel asked hoping that it was not what he was thinking.

"Don't act like you don't know what happened, you're making caira restless, You're so mean to her and never treat her nicely, and now she's home sick and if you don't start treating her nicely, she'll leave" Dianna said with a pout.

"Is that all she told you?" Mikel asked curiously.

"Yes, I guess....is there anything else?" Dianna asked while Mikel let out a sigh of relief.

"No, I'll start being nice to her" Mikel said while Dianna scoffed.

"That's a lie Mikel, I know you're only saying this to make me leave!!, But guess what Mikel, I'll be back for you" Dianna said and stormed out. Silence stepped in immediately Dianna left, but Zack broke the silence.

"So, how was it?" Zack asked Mikel

"How was what?" Mikel answered

"How was she,... I mean how did she taste" Zack asked with a smirk while Mikel simply ignored him.

"How are you planning to make it up to her?" Zack asked again.

"I don't really know, I offered to give her some money but she rejected it" Mikel answered.

"Well, I think you should probably date her since you don't have a girlfriend" Zack said but Mikel shot him a deadly stare.

"C'mon dude, don't give me that look, I know you feel something for her" Zack said

"I don't feel anything for her, I only feel like making her my sex partner, that's all" Mikel said with a shrug

"Really? Then what will you do about Zoey" Zack asked

"Zoey can perform her job as a secretary" Mikel answered.

"Are you thinking of replacing Zoey with caira?" Zack said

"No, what happened between me and caira last night was a mere mistake, and it won't happen again" Mikel answered.

\*\*\*\*\*

Zoey stood at Mikel's door, eavesdropping on his conversation with Zack. "What did Mikel mean by \*WHAT HAPPENED BETWEEN HIM AND CAIRA LAST NIGHT?\*" Zoey thought within herself, and what did Zack also mean by \*replacing caira with Zoey\*

Zoey thought again. There was so many pressing questions running through her mind.

"Could it be that Mikel had sex with the lowly maid and is planning on replacing me with the maid?"

Zoey thought to her self again. She never really understood what they were saying but she can't let anyone take her unaware, she needed to act fast or else, she might find her things thrown outside the mansion some day. She walked quickly to her room and unlocked a small box, she brought out a small bottle and hid in between her breast. She never thought it would result to that but caira left her with no choice. She walked into the kitchen and met the maids on duty. Luckily, caira was one of them. There was only 2 maids in the kitchen, Elvira and caira. She smirked as a thought niggled in her mind, caira was definitely leaving the mansion Tonight" Zoey said with a smirk.

"Elvira, caira!! Please get the empty dishes in my

room and in the young master's room" Zoey said making her way into the kitchen.

"Okay Miss Zoey, caira please serve the food while I go get the dishes" Elvira said and walked out leaving caira and Zoey in the kitchen.

"Caira please help Elvira get the dishes in my room, you know, it's much and Elvira won't be able to do it alone" Zoey said with a faux smile while caira left hesitantly.

Immediately caira left, Zoey checked to ensure that there was no one watching, then she took two plates which she used in serving her meal and Mikel's meal. After that, she brought out the small bottle and sprinkled the content into the entire pot of food. She quickly closed the pot and returned the bottle in between her breast. Just when she finished, Elvira and caira was seen walking in together.

"Sorry Miss Zoey, but we couldn't find any empty

dish in any of the rooms" Elvira said.

"Oh?..probably the other maids might have taken it away while cleaning the rooms today. Anyways, I've served my meal and the young master's meal, you can serve the rest to everyone" Zoey said with and left the kitchen with Mikel plate of food and hers.

TBC

My better half

Highschool crush

By AUTHORESS prudence

Episode 29

zoey walked into mikel's room holding his plate of food, she approached his room and pushed it open without knocking, immediately she saw mikel, her face beamed in a fake smile.

"Hey your meal is ready" zoey beamed as she



dropped the food on his table while mikel only spared her a side glance.

“oh, hey Zack!!” zoey beemed again with a fake smile

“hey hottie” zack also replied with a smile. zoey stood for a while in the room until she noticed that her presence was limiting them, then she walked out of mikel’s room and headed to the kitchen, there she met the Chief cook and two other maids. she smirked as a thought niggled in her mind.

“madam Gracia, i’d like to see you in my room right now” Zoey said to the chief cook and walked to her room quickly while the maid followed behind her immediately.

\*\*\*\*\*

“No ma’am!! please I can’t do that” the chief maid said shaking her head negatively

“i’m not asking you to do it, neither am I begging,

but I hope you know that I am in position of firing both you and your helpless daughter. You either choose between your job and caira” Zoey said while the maid hesitated for a while before giving her an answer.

“please I still need my job here, I will do whatever you ask of” the chief cook said with a sniff while Zoey let out a smirk.

the chief maid walked to the kitchen and met caira and Elvira washing the dishes, she needed an avenue to make Elvira eat the food and also send caira out of the house.

“Elvira you’ve been working for so long, you can have a break and eat before the food gets cold!!” Madam Gracia said walking into the kitchen

“thank you ma’am” Elvira said as she heaved a sigh of relief

“one more thing, please make sure you serve the

food to everyone in this mansion” Madam Gracia said while Elvira nodded in affirmation and left the kitchen leaving only Madam Gracia and Caira in the kitchen.

“Caira, I would like you to go to the grocery store and get some things” Madam Gracia said to caira who was busy washing the dishes but stopped immediately she heard her name.

“okay, ma’am, what would you like me to get in the stall” caira asked

“uhmm....i think we ran out of hot sauce, can you please purchase 5 bottles of hot sauce at the near by grocery store?..here you go” Madam Gracia said handing over some notes of money to caira.

“okay ma’am” caira said as she rushed out of the kitchen.

The food was shared among most of the maids in the mansion. Dianna equally partake in the meal.

luckily, Mr&Mrs camford left to the airport before the food was ready, so they didn't take part in eating the food. Dianna ate the food with relish till the plate was almost empty. At first, it as a grumbling in the stomach and then the heavy urge to puke.

“please get me a bottle of water” dianna said to the maid beside her while the maid rushed to get it but before she could return with the bottle of water, dianna had ran to the toilet puking heavily, while the maid followed behind her.

“miss, are you okay?” the maid asked with concern but it only got worse as she threw up heavily with a stream line of blood trailing down her nostril. It went on until she slumped and fainted. The maid got alarmed and ran out in attempt to notify the other maids only to see most of the maids in the same condition with dianna. Just few who haven't consumed the meal was conscious and were seen

running in confusion.

“wh...what’s happening here?” the maid asked one of her co-worker

“I don’t know Mira, It started after they eat the food,i think the food is poisoned” she answered

“there is a big problem because Miss dianna also ate the food and right now, she’s unconscious, I think we need to inform madam caroline. We’re all going to loose our job today!!!!” the maid panicked as she picked up the phone with shaky hands and dailed madam caroline phone number.

\*\*\*\*\*

immediately Mr&Mrs Camford heard the news, they rushed back home. Dianna was moved to the hospital for treatment while all the maids were assembled in the sitting room, Mr Camford’s face was crumbled in anger and frustration as he paced round the sitting room restlessly.

“I will ask for the last time, who among you tempered with the food?!” Mr Camford’s voice thundered bringing fear to the minds of the maids.

“sir, I swear I dont know anything about this. Elvira and Caira were in charge of the food and are answerable to any complaint against the food, but Elvira was also poisoned and Caira is no where to be found” madam gracia said shivering in fear

She was still trying to explain herself when they heard the door go open and caira entered with a grocery bag, madam gracia's eyes glinted immediately she sighted her.

"Here she is sir!!! That's caira!!" Madam Gracia said aloud.

"Uhhh..... what's going on here?" Caira asked in confusion. Mr Camford stared coldly at her for a while but he finally found his voice.

"Are you caira?" Mr Camford said with a Stern look

"Yes, I am" caira replied still not understanding what was happening.

"Did you poison the food?" Mr Camford asked while caira furrowed her brows in confusion.

"Wh.. what's happening here.. I don't understand, I just came in now, I .....

"Did you poison the food? I need a simple answer from you!!!" Mr Camford yelled interrupting caira while her body vibrated in shock.

"No Sir, I didn't poison....

"Good!!! Gracia, serve the food for her to eat!!" Mr Camford said to madam Gracia as she nodded in affirmation and headed to fetch the food for caira. In no time, she was done and headed back to the sitting room and placed the plate of Noddles on the table.

"Have your sit" Mr Camford said to caira calmly while caira walked towards the chair hesitantly

and sat down uncomfortably.

"Good girl, now eat the food you cooked" Mr Camford said while madam Caroline's eyes glinted in shock.

"No honey!! There must be a misunderstanding somewhere!! I know caira very well, her mum is a good friend of mine, she wouldn't do anything to hurt....

"Caroline, your daughter is lying unconscious in the hospital and you are defending an ordinary maid who is behind it!!!" Mr Camford yelled out.

"Honey, you don't have to be rash in making decisions, a proper investigation needs to be carried out!!" Madam Caroline said in defense to caira.

"That's enough woman, I can handle it myself" Mr Camford said.

"Eat it now" Mr Camford said to caira while caira



gulped down nothing and proceeded by picking up the fork, she was about taking the full spoon of Noddles to her mouth when Mikel interrupted.

"There would be no need for that. It's obvious that she poisoned the food, I already contacted the cops and they will be here for her in no time" Mikel said walking down the stairs      My better half

Highschool crush

By Authoress prudence

Episode 32.

"I'm sorry" Mikel said realizing his mistake.

Caira stared at him in surprise with her left finger on her lips and unexpectedly, she held mikel's collar and placed her lips on his. Mikel also reciprocated as he moved his hand to her hair, slowly savouring her lips. He moved his hands to her zipper, taking off her dress and her dress came falling on the floor

\*\*\*\*\*

Caira woke up the next morning with slight headache, she turned to the other side of the bed only to find Mikel sitting close to the window with a cup of coffee on his right hand. She also find out that there was a duvet covering her, she raised the duvet slightly and held it to her chest quickly when she discovered that she was Stark naked. She placed her hands on her head when she suddenly remembered what happened, she was in mikel's room the previous evening for a science project but she let lust take over her. She wasn't entirely blaming herself because she felt Mikel started it, he made the first move. If he hadn't turned her on, she wouldn't have been carried away. She knew how badly she have always wanted to kiss him but that doesn't give him the right to kiss her first. Mikel seemed to noticed that she was awake so, he took a cup of coffee and walked towards her.

"Here you go" Mikel said handing over the cup of coffee to her

"Thank you" caira said as he collected the cup of coffee reluctantly.

"I'm sorry about yesterday" Mikel said as he sipped from his cup, he wasn't looking as sorry as he claimed to be.

"I'm also sorry about yesterday even though you started it" caira said as she placed the coffee on her lap gently.

"Really?..... You look so innocent and naive but you're really crazy in bed" Mikel said as he took the cup of coffee from her and drew nearer to her, making caira to grip the duvet firmly to her body.

"I'll like to leave now, if anyone gets to know about this, I'll definitely loose my job here" caira said as she left the bed and picked up her clothes on the floor.

"That's if you tell anyone about this. As long as you keep this a secret, You won't loose your job" Mikel said to her while she rushed to the bathroom to change her clothes.

"I do hope that this affairs end now, please don't make me quit my job" caira said and was about leaving the room when Mikel spoke out.

"Before you go, I just want to to know your place around me. we aren't having any serious affair, In my eyes, you are just one of those random bitches who I can have at anytime and pay them off for their service, but you have decided to work for free, which is none of my business. But if you later have a change of heart and decide not to offer free service anymore, you can inform me and I'll start paying you off" Mikel said confidently while caira stormed out of the room in anger.

She walked along the hallway in disappointment, she felt like disappearing into thin air when she

saw Zoey who was wearing on a hard stare. she greeted her and attempted walking past her but Zoey stopped her.

"Stop right there!!" Zoey yelled out while caira turned back and walked to her

"Where are you coming back from?" Zoey asked impatiently.

"The young master's room" caira replied trying to suppress hide her fear.

"Why were you there this early" Zoey asked.

"I was cleaning up the bathroom" caira lied

"Really? You've been cleaning up his room since yesterday evening, do you really think I'm stupid!?" Zoey said while caira shivered in fear.

"No" caira replied in a timid voice

"I'm watching you, I know you're having an affair with Mikel and I'll make sure you loose your job

here

\*\*\*\*\*

Caira's whole day at school was ruined, she kept thinking about what Mikel said to her and how she was going to deal with the present situation at hand, this was the most critical moments of her life, she was left in a dilemma to choose between her job and her dignity. How would her mom feel if she quits the job, ever since she got a job at the mansion, whenever she calls her mom, she notice the unusual excitement in her voice. Her mom also told her that she no longer goes to the nearby grocery store to collect food stuff on credit. If she tells her mom what is really happening between her and Mikel, that would definitely ruin the friendship between her and madam Caroline. No!!! She don't want to be the one to destroy a long term friendship. They weren't able to complete their science project the previous night because of

what happened, but she never knew where Mikel got an already prepared project from. The presentation went well, though, she did the presentation alone because Mikel got missing at the time of the presentation and appeared from nowhere after the presentation has been done, maybe he never wanted to identify himself with a low life. Caira arrived home before Mikel, and when she stepped into the room, she saw an handsome young man sitting at the dinning room with madam Caroline. Madam Caroline seemed to be fill with joy as they laughed happily. When they heard the door open, They both turned around to see who it was

"Oh welcome back caira, what about Mikel, isn't he back yet?" Madam Caroline said trying to see if anyone was following behind her.

"Good day ma'am, he should be on his way" caira said. Caira was about walking away when madam

Caroline called her back.

"Mind my manners dear, this is caira, she is my best friends daughter, she also works here. Caira, this is Jace, my eldest son, he came all the way from California to visit his family" madam Caroline said again.

Jace kept staring at caira strangely as he couldn't take his eyes off her.

"Hi, good to have you back home Sir" caira said with a smile as she stretched forth her right hand for a hand shake.

"Hey pretty, nice meeting you" Jace said as he accepted her hand shake eagerly.

"Uhhh... I'll like to leave now Sir, it was a pleasure meeting you" caira said trying to pull her hand out of Jace tight and unending hand shake "Sure...sure!!! See you Soon" Jace said as he let go of her hands and watched her as she left the



dinning room.

"Mum, ....when you said she works here, do you really mean she's also a maid" Jace asked still not getting over the sight of her

"Yes, she....

Madam Caroline was interrupted by the sound of the door and mikel's presence. I Mikel stood at the door in shock as he stared at his brother, and with and slowly, he walked to the dinning room.

"Mum, you never told me that Jace was coming over" Mikel asked still in shock

"Well, I just wanted it to be a surprise" madam Caroline said with a shrug

"Good to see you buddy" Mikel said with a smile as he gave Jace a hand shake.

\*\*\*\*\*

Jace sat in his room deep in thoughts, the maid he

met earlier was really enticing and he was craving to have a one night stand with her. Good thing she was an just a maid, so there would be no difficulty in getting her on his bed, all he needed to do was to send for her.

"Ladd, who is that new maid?" Jace asked the guard in his room

"Sir, you mean caira? She just got hired few weeks ago" Ladd answered with a bow.

"Yeah, I think be she's hot and pretty" Jace uttered coldly

"Would you like to have her tonight, I can get her now if you like her" Ladd said.

"Yes, send for her immediately" Jace said as he walked to the bathroom.

TBC

UNEDITED EPISODE

My better half

Highschool crush

By Authoress Prudence

Episode 33

Caira took her bath and changed to her nighties, she was about going to bed when she heard a knock on the door.

"Yes, how can I help you?" She asked upon opening the door.

"The young master requested to see you urgently" the guard announced

"Sorry I've closed for the day, you can tell him that" caira said and was about shutting her door when the guard held the door

"Jace doesn't take NO for an answer" the guard said while caira stood surprised, she actually thought it was Mikel who sent for her, she never

knew it was his brother.

"Oh!! I'm so sorry!!! Please give me a minute to change into something decent" caira said and tried closing the door again but the guard stopped her.

"There'll be no need for that, he wouldn't take much of your time. He wish to see you right now, you've already spent so much time asking questions" the guard answered.

Caira had a look at her self and good thing the nighties was long enough to cover her, it seems even more decent than her maiden's uniform.

"Oh, okay" caira said as she closed her door and followed the guard quickly. She arrived at Jace door and the guard who had brought her, turned back and attempted leaving.

"Wait, what am I supposed to do" caira asked in confusion

"Get in, he's been waiting" the guard said and left.

Caira gave a knock on the door and when she heard his approval, she entered with no clue why he called her. When she stepped into the room, she couldn't find anyone in the room.

"Hello, anyone in?" Caira said aloud.

"Come to the bathroom now" Jace voice was heard in the bathroom, caira walked to the bathroom with her head's down. When She got to the bathroom, she met Jace in the bathtub filled sopy water, caira saw that he was taking his bath, so she turned around to leave but Jace called her back.

"I can see you came prepared" Jace said in while caira turned her face away, still wondering what he meant.

"I don't get it sir, please explain" caira asked in sincere ignorance

"Come closer" Jace said gesticulated while caira

moved obediently

"I'll like you to help me get bath" Jace said while caira turned to look at him in shock.

"Sir... sir, I'm sorry but I'm a lady and I can't do that but I'll call a male servant to help you get bath" caira said

"It's an order, I don't take No for an answer" Jace said while caira advanced towards him and knelt down at the edge of the bathtub and picked-up a bar soap. She proceeded by gently scrubbing the soap from his hand and down to his neck. Jace held her hand and moved it to his chest region while caira gulped hard as she proceeded by rubbing the bath soap all over his chest. Jace held her hand and tried moving it into the water but caira was quick enough to pull her hand out and moved away.

"What was that for? C'mon, Don't be scared, I won't hurt you as long as you cooperate" Jace said

with a hard stare while caira took a bold step by walking back to him, though with shivering hands. She picked up the soap on the floor and resumed by scrubbing his chest continuously, she was still running the bar soap sluggishly when Jace gripped her right arm roughly and dragged her into the soapy water. He quickly climbed on top of her while caira struggled her way out of the water gasping for air. She held on to the edge of the bathtub for support and attempted sitting up properly but his manly power superceded hers.

"Please don't!!" Caira whimpered in fear. She look deep into his eyes and all she could see was urge and a beast in a man form. Jace grabbed her nighties in attempt to tear it but unconsciously,caira bit his hand really hard. As soon as caira attacked him, she realized that she has just made the biggest mistake of her life, but it was already too late.

"I'm so sorry" caira said in fear but she only received a slap from Jace.

"Bitch, you're so pathetic!!" Jace said as he held caira's head with his both hands as he tried pushing her head into the soapy water in attempt to drown her. Caira kept struggling until she felt her head deep inside the water making her to suffocate and drowning slowly. She moved her hands to his arm and tried pushing his hand away from her head but he was just too strong for her to deal with all alone. Jace was pressing her head deep into the water while caira kept struggling helplessly. She was gradually drowning and loosing breath slowly.

Fortunately, Jace was interrupted by a knock on the door. at first, he attempted to ignore it but the knock came on the door again, ans this time, jace got paranoid and answered rudely.

"Come back later, I'm busy" Jace said arrogantly



but he heard mikel's voice in return.

"How long will you be in there, open the door Will you?" Mikel said while Jace flinched in shock as he let go of caira quickly while she came out of the water gasping for air heavily.

"Shhhh!!!! If you make any more noise or tell anyone about this, I swear I'll kill you and make sure no one ever finds your body" Jace said in an extremely low voice while caira dabbed her mouth with her both hands to prevent her cries from being heard by anyone.

"Stay here and stay quiet" Jace said as he left the bathroom and proceeded to get the door. Jace opened the door ushering Mikel in with a fake smile.

"What's the smile about?, What took you so long" Mikel said walking into Jace room

"Well, I was in the shower. What's up bro, you got

any bitch I could use tonight?" Jace asked

"I could send Zoey to you or probably hand her over to you for free" Mikel answered

"Thanks for the offer but I think I saw someone today that really caught my attention, she was so hot and pretty" Jace said while Mikel smirked

"If you know her name, I'll definitely help you get her" Mikel said with a shrug

"Well, she introduced herself as caira, I don't really know if.....

"Wait, wait, wait Jace, what did you say her name was again?" Mikel interrupted jace as his face crumbled up

"Caira...do you know her" Jace asked

"Uhhh... Jace, I really think you should forget about her" Mikel said

"Why?" Jace asked

"Or is she your bitch?" Jace asked while Mikel stood up to leave but Jace stopped him

"Oh, now I get it. But you know we're buddies, we share everything, be it dress, shoes. C'mon man!!" Jace said

"I can share anything with you but not her, please stay far away from her, I wouldn't want us to get into a big fight" Mikel said as he walked away in annoyance leaving Jace in shock.

\*\*\*\*\*

Caira was still in the the bathroom afraid to go out, the weirdest thing was that she couldn't even hear Jace conversation with Mikel until he left. Soon after Mikel left, Jace went back to the bathroom to meet caira.

"Leave now and come back tomorrow morning, I shouldn't wait or send for you before you get here" Jace said while caira left almost immediately. She

got outside and was about leaving for her Room when she heard a familiar voice. She turned around and saw Mikel standing at a far distance.

"How long have you been in my brother's room and why is your dress wet" Mikel asked with a Stern look while caira attempted walking past him but he stopped her.

"I've been in your room before I came to see Jace, I knew you were there" Mikel said

"And when do you start monitoring my movements?, When did you start caring about my whereabouts?" Caira said as she turned around and saw Dianna standing behind her.

TBC

My better half

Highschool crush

By AUTHORESS prudence

## Episode 31

"Some one has a confession to make" Mikel said as he walked to the couch and had his sit.

"I poisoned the food" the maid said looking down. Mr Camford's eyes glinted in shock when he heard her.

"Why...why did you do it?" Madam Caroline asked after a long silence while the maid kept mute and cried on

"They'll be no need for that, just get her locked up and let caira out" Mikel said and headed back to his room.

"I knew it, I knew caira didn't do it!!! So, what are you waiting for? Call the cops and get her out immediately" madam Caroline said while Mr Camford stared in shock, he still couldn't believe that he got the wrong person.

That same day, Mr Camford called the cops and

caira was released, he also paid her a compensation fee to make up for his actions. Dianna and the other maids were discharged from the hospital while caira went to check up on her in her room, caira narrated all that happened during her unconscious state while Dianna listened attentively.

"Wow, so you mean I missed all that?" Dianna asked weakly

"Yap, you did" caira answered

"I'm so sorry for how my dad treated you, he's so rash in taking decisions and he's not a good listener" Dianna said sincerely

"It's fine, he was just doing what a father would do for his daughter, good thing the culprit have been caught and arrested" caira said with a smile

"But why would Annie want to poison anyone in this mansion? I still think this whole thing is weird,

Anna is so calm and nice, don't you also think this is weird?" Dianna asked while caira nodded in affirmation.

Dianna and caira spoke for a very long time until they were both sleepy, caira turned off Dianna's light and also headed back to her room. She was on her way to her room when she stumbled into Mikel, when she sighted Mikel, she attempted to follow another route but Mikel was quick enough to hold her arm.

"Wait" Mikel said as he held her hand and dragged her back gently

"Good evening master" caira greeted with a bow

"You can keep the formalities to your self, no one is here" Mikel said looking directly at her while caira turned away quickly to avoid eye contact

"How can I be of help to you" caira asked with her stare on the floor

"What are you supposed to do when someone helps you" Mikel asked still holding her arm

"Let me go, I'm not in the mood for any of your nonsense, you called the cops on me and didn't let me explain, do you think you can use me and kick me out of your house? And you really think getting me locked up will stop me from telling everyone that you raped me!!!" Caira said while Mikel placed his palm on her mouth to prevent her from saying anything else. He held her arm and dragged her to the basement.

"Let me go!" Caira said but Mikel gripped her hand really tight

"Caira, you have to listen to me, i was only.....

"Please let me go, I don't wanna hear any of it, I'll like to have a rest" caira said trying to free her self from mikel's grip around her arm

"Shut up and listen!!.....



"Let go of my arm or else I'll scream" caira threatened but Mikel held her arm tightly, inflicting pain on her left arm.

"Mikel, you're hurting me" caira said while mikel's eyes dimmed as he let go of her arm quickly.

"Forget it" Mikel muttered as he turned away and left her in the basement.

\*\*\*\*\*

### The\_Next\_Day

Caira sat in the class tiredly while the teacher in front of the class talked on, ever since her encounter with Mikel, she had been thinking a lot and feeling guilty. what if anyone gets to know about it? Madam Caroline will definitely fire her and her mum will be disappointed in her. Her attention wasn't entirely in the classroom but she over heard the teacher talking about a science project. She knew Mikel was her study partner and

they were to do the project together. As Time flies, they closed from school in. Immediately caira arrived home, she took a shower and changed into the maiden's uniform and set out to work. She also checked on Dianna and good thing she was doing just fine. She did all her chores and finished early because she was having a science project with Mikel that same day, they were to present it the next day. She sat in the sitting room waiting to see if Mikel would step out of his room but there was no trace of him. Caira never wanted to go to his room but she had no choice, she needed a helping hand and she also felt it would be nice to let Mikel take part in the project since it was supposed to be a team work. She walked to his room holding a testing tube and other things needed for the science project. When she arrived at his door, she knocked gently and just like Mikel was actually expecting her, his calm voice was heard ushering her in, so she opened the door and went in. When

she stepped in, she was welcomed by a nice fragrance. she was feeling so comfortable with the environment but the sight of Mikel who was sitting close to the window spoiled everything.

"Good day master" caira said with a bow while Mikel looked up

"How can I help you" Mikel asked with a cigarette on his right hand.

"It's about the science project, I was just thinking if you're interested in joining me, but it's okay if you're busy or not interested, I can handle everything by.....

"Why wouldn't I be interested?. Have your sit if you're ready now" Mikel said walking towards her.

"Are we having it here?" Caira asked in surprise.

"Where else do you want to have it?" Mikel asked as he advanced towards her and stood very close to her.

"It's fine....i.... think here would do" caira uttered against her will.

The smell of cigarettes was really disturbing, so caira turned away to avoid inhaling more of it. Mikel noticed that the cigarette was making her uncomfortable, so he also put off the cigarette and headed to a table while caira followed behind him.

Mikel took his sit while caira sat facing him. He poured him self a glass of wine and also poured wine into another glass. He took it carefully and handed it over to caira while caira stared at him in confusion.

"Have it" Mikel said still holding out the glass of wine.

"Thank you, but I'm full, and I don't take alcohol" caira said nicely but Mikel got slightly upset with her.

"Get up and leave" Mikel said dropping the glass of

wine on the table while caira picked it up quickly and gulped down the entire content.

"Are you satisfied now?" Caira asked placing down the glass of wine while Mikel nodded with a smirk.

Caira started by arranging all the equipment while Mikel watched on. When she was done with the arrangements, she set out to work and started mixing all the required chemicals. Mikel who was feeling left out, moved his chair very close to caira's chair making caira confused and uncomfortable.

Caira was beginning to feel uncomfortable and needed to be away from Mikel for some time.

"Uh... I'll like to turn on the air conditioner, I think the room is a bit hot and stuffy" caira said and attempted leaving the chair but Mikel stopped her.

"Really? But the air conditioner is on and is directly in front of us" Mikel said starring at her in a strange

manner.

"Ohh!!..I didn't notice that" caira said taking her sit making Mikel smirk again.

"You should make your self comfortable and concentrate on what you're doing, but if you are feeling nervous, you can just take one more glass and it will relief you of pressure" Mikel said holding out a bottle of alcohol while caira's eyes dilated in shock as she turned to have a look at him. How the hell did he know that his presence was making her uncomfortable?.

Caira's eyes locked with Mikel as they both stared intensively at each other with no intentions of turning away. And unexpectedly, Mikel drew his face closer to hers and gave her a long kiss on her lip. Caira broke the kiss and pushed him away quickly.

"I'm sorry" Mikel said realizing his mistake.

Caira stared at him in surprise with her left finger on her lips and unexpectedly, she held mikel's collar and placed her lips on his.

TBC

My better half

Highschool crush

By AUTHORESS prudence

Episode 30

"There would be no need for that. It's obvious that she poisoned the food, I already contacted the cops and they will be here for her in no time" Mikel said walking down the stairs, sending shivers down caira's spine.

"Mikel!!!" Madam Caroline yelled out while Mikel simply walked to the couch and had his sit.

"sir!! You have to believe me, I didn't add anything harmful in the food, I swear, I didn't" caira

whimpered already in tears.

"You can tell that to the cops when they get here" Mikel said with a hard stare, he seemed unbothered by the situation at hand.

"A proper investigation needs to be carried out, we can't just conclude" madam Caroline said but got no response from anyone. In less than 10 minutes, the cops arrived and nabbed caira.

"Madam, you have to believe me, I didn't add anything in the food!!!" Caira said to the chief cook but madam Gracia got paranoid as she stormed towards caira, landing a heavy slap on her cheek.

"How dare you caira, how dare you bring shame unto my name, I have been working in this mansion for more than 10 years and I've never recorded any case of attempt murder or food poisoning by any maid, my maids are well discipline, but you're nothing but a murderer, you need to be fired!! I can't....."



"Enough Gracia!!! You don't have the right to fire anyone" madam Caroline said interrupting madam Gracia.

"Caira, I'll find a way to get you out, I know you're innocent, as for you Mikel, I'll like to see you in my room right now!!" Madam Caroline said but Mikel stood up and headed towards his room while madam Caroline followed behind him quickly

"Mikel, get back here right now!!" Madam Caroline said going after Mikel. luckily, she was able to catch up with him as she followed him into his room and closed the door.

"Mikel, what is wrong with you? Why did you call the cops on her?" Madam Caroline asked almost in a whisper.

"What's wrong with what I did, I was only trying to help" Mikel stated as he attempted picking up a bottle of wine but his mother stopped him.

"In what way did you think you've helped, huh? You've got an innocent girl arrested" madam Caroline said

"Mum! I know she's innocent but I did what I did to stop her from eating the food, I know Dad too well, he is very persistent and doesn't forgive easily, he was trying to force her to eat the poisoned food, if I haven't stopped him by calling the cops, he would have forced her to eat the food and wouldn't want anyone to attend to her medically. I know you love her so much and I'm sorry if I offended you by my actions but I think she should be away from the mansion for now, It will give me enough time to investigate and find the real culprit. You don't need to worry about her safety, I've told the cops to keep an eye on her and ensure that she is fed properly." Mikel said while his mum heaved a sigh of relief

"Oh, please make sure you find the culprit and find

out who poisoned your sister, I know Dianna will be fine, the doctor said it was a minor poison and all she need was good rest and some medications" madam Caroline said looking really worried

\*\*\*\*\*

Zoey picked up her phone as dialed Fifi's number, it rang for a pretty long time until she finally picked up.

"Hello Zoey, how did it go?" Fifi asked over the phone.

"It was really bad Fifi, it didn't work out well" Zoey uttered almost in a whisper

"Why,...what went wrong?" Fifi asked again

"I don't know Fifi, I thought the potion was supposed to cause irritation, nausea reactions and a little stomachache?? " Zoey asked

"Yes, what happened?" Fifi asked

"I added the potion to everyone's food in the house except for mine and mikel's food, and presently, Dianna and some other maids passed out after they ate the food and were all rushed to the hospital." Zoey said worriedly

"They are not supposed to pass out, how many tea spoon did you put in the food?" Fifi asked

"Tea spoon? ...I think I poured the whole content" Zoey said.

"What the hell!!!! You used everything? Do you have any idea how poisonous that potion could be when it is used above the normal dosage?" Fifi asked in shock

"I don't know what came over me, I just wanted the reaction to be more effective because I really wanted her to be fired!!" Zoey said in fear

"Okay, Was she fired?" Fifi asked

"She was arrested and I know she's definitely

gonna be fired" Zoey answered.

"Well, I guess you got what you wanted after all, but I only wish you shut your mouth and not say anything that will implicate you and I. just try to act normal and make sure no one suspects you, don't worry, it's gonna be over soon." Fifi said in a calm voice.

"Okay Fifi, I just hope no one gets to find out" Zoey said as she ended the call, she turned her back and was about heading out when she saw Mikel leaning on the door. She flinched in shock as her phone also came crashing on the floor

"It's been you all along?" Mikel asked after a short silence between them.

"Mikel, I know you're really disappointed in me but you left me with no choice, I just can't.....

"Save your breath, send for any random maid"  
Mikel said and walked out of Zoey's room

"Mikel....you really need to let me explain" Zoey said aloud but Mikel ignored her.

\*\*\*\*\*

Mikel sat in his room with a glass of wine on his hand when he heard a knock on the door.

"Come in" he said in his usual cold tone while the maid walked in and stood in front of Mikel.

"Good day master" the maid greeted with a bow.

"Have your sit, I'll like to do business with with you" Mikel said while the maid sat down.

Caira sat Alone in the jail, it's been two days since she was jailed for something she knew nothing about, but one thing she couldn't understand was why there was a bed there and why they fed her regularly. she has never been to jail before but she knew that prisoners were not treated well. Why isn't anyone torturing or interrogating her? why were they feeding her, and why does her jail seem

a bit comfortable? Ever since she got jailed like they claimed, she does nothing more than living like someone who was only placed under house arrest. At that moment, There was so many questions running through her mind but the more pressing question was about Dianna's well being. She only hope Dianna was alright, and she earnestly wished that her mother doesn't get to know that she was in jail, she was still deep in thought when she heard the door go open and madam Caroline walked in, caira flung up as she rushed to her.

"Ma'am, I didn't do it, someone set me up" caira said holding madam Caroline's hand.

"I know caira, I believe you, I promise you, I'll get you out of here soon" madam Caroline said stroking caira's hair gently

"Does my mother know about this?" Caira asked while madam Caroline nodded negatively.

"Please don't tell my mom about it, she'll be worried" caira said

"You have my word, I won't tell her about this" madam Caroline said while caira heaved a sigh of relief.

"How is Dianna doing?" Caira asked concerned

"She's getting better, They'll all be discharged by tomorrow morning" madam Caroline replied.

\*\*\*\*\*

Mikel walked to the sitting room with a maid followed behind him, he stopped while the maid went on her knees immediately.

"Someone has a confession to make" Mikel said drawing the attention of his dad and his mum who were sitted in the sitting room

TBC

What is Mikel up to?



## My Better Half

### Highschool crush

By Authoress Prudence.

### Episode 35

Jace staggered back as he felt mikel's fist hit him across the face, he was left in shock as he couldn't believe that Mikel would ever raise his hands on him, that has never happened before.

"Dude, did you just hit me?" Jace asked still in shock as he moved his finger to his lip and felt something dripping, he moved his hand down only to discover that his lip was bleeding.

"Jace, stay away from her, there many other maids in this mansion and....."

"How dare you hit me, I'm your elder brother!!!"  
Jace said as he also hit mikel.

He walked towards caira and jerked her hair really

hard and attempted taking her with him but Mikel pulled him back abruptly and pushed him away. Things got heated up as the both brothers fought badly while caira stood at a far distance and watched them in confusion. She blamed her self for what happened but she didn't know if it was right for her to call for help or stop them. No!!, She can't stop them, what if one of them eventually hurts her.

"Stop, that's enough!!!" Caira yelled out but they turned deaf ears to her.

Caira was still standing in contemplation when she saw Jace picked up a kitchen knife and threw it towards her. She watched as the knife flew in mid air and pierced into her left arm

Caira winced in pain immediately she felt the knife pierced into her skin, seeing the surprise look on mikel's face, Jace let out a look of satisfaction and walked out of the kitchen in contentment while

Mikel rushed to caira.

"Are you okay?" Mikel asked trying to hold her injured arm but caira moved away in pain.

"I think so" Caira muttered in tears.

Mikel held her arm and tried taking her away but caira protested, but mikel insisted as he gripped her forcefully and led her to his room. He got inside his room and locked the door with a key and inserted the key into his pocket. Caira walked to the door and attempted opening it but to no avail.

" let me out" caira said upon walking back to Mikel.

"You're not going out for now, it's for your own good" Mikel said as he walked to a drawer and brought out a small first aid box. Caira was about saying something else when he dragged her gently, making her to sit close to him on the bed. Mikel opened the first aid box and brought out a cotton wool, he held Caira's injured arm carefully while

caira twitched in discomfort.

"Uhhh...there will be no need for that, it no big deal, it's just a little scratch, I can take good care of my self" caira said trying to withdraw her arm from mikel, but mikel ignored her as he proceeded by dabbing the cotton wool on the wounded spot carefully.

In less than 5 minutes, he was done, so he concluded his work by wrapping her arm with a bandage.

"Thank you" caira muttered nervously as Mikel packed up the first aid kit.

"For the time being, there will be no need for you to go back to your room, I'll send for your things to be brought to my room, you can share my room with me for now, I'll figure out how to deal with Jace" Mikel announced with a Stern look.

"No, I can't stay with you, I need to go back to

work" caira said as she left the bed.

"I'm not asking you to stay, it's an order. As for your job, you don't need to worry about that because if Jace kills you, no one would ever notice your absence in the mansion apart from Dianna" Mikel uttered coldly.

Caira hesitated for a little while and gave it a second thought. What Mikel said did make a lot of sense, of course, she wasn't planning on going out there all alone, Jace almost killed her twice, but Mikel was the reason she was still alive. In as much as she always wanted to avoid Mikel, she still had to stay with him and figure out what to do next.

\*\*\*\*\*

Caira sat on Mikel's couch as she watched him puffing out cigarette repeatedly. She was beginning to get bored and worried. Why must Mikel be so cold and boring?. She wasn't sure if she could bear to spend few more minutes with him..

"Uhhh... for how long will I be staying here?" caira asked fiddling with the tip of her dress.

"Are you bored" Mikel answered after some moments of silence.

"No, I was just curious" caira answered, but Mikel grabbed the TV remote and switch on the TV. Again, He headed towards the kitchen and appeared with a popcorn.

"Here you go, I know you're bored" Mikel said as he handed over the popcorn to caira while she collected it with a heart of gratitude.

Mikel inserted a CD in the DVD player and turned it on while caira watched curiously. They both sat quietly together as they watched the movie with keen interest. Caira seemed to be really interested in the movie as she grabbed a little quantity of the popcorn into her mouth at regular intervals, the movie had barely ended when she unconsciously fell asleep on mikel's shoulder.

\*\*\*\*\*

Caira waked up late the following morning with slight pains on her back. She turned around and found Mikel sitting on the with his phone on his hand. she turned around and was gobsmacked when she found out that it was already five minutes past seven. How did she sleep so long, and Mikel didn't even bother to wake her up.

"Good morning, is this clock working perfectly....I mean, is the time really 7:05am?" Caira asked still in shock.

"Obviously" Mikel answered with his eyes fixed on his phone.

"Oh my goodness, I'm running late for school" caira said as she stood up in a haste and headed towards the bathroom. Lucky, her toothbrush, soap, body lotion and all her stuffs was already in the room.

"Go make me breakfast first" Mikel said adding more to Caira's frustration.

"I'm so sorry sir, I'll ask someone else to prepare you breakfast, I really need to get ready for school" caira answered in a haste to get into the bathroom

"No, I want you to make it your self, I'm not asking for too much, just a cup of coffee." Mikel said with a shrug while caira walked to kitchen begrudgingly. Caira was about leaving when Mikel called her back.

"Wait, you can call me Mikel, you don't really have to act formally towards me." Mikel said without even sparing her a side glance while Caira muttered an "okay sir" and headed to the kitchen.

In no time, caira was done preparing his coffee, she took her bath and prepared hurriedly while Mikel sat on the bed making a phone call.

"I just asked my driver to drop you off at school"



Mikel said upon ending the call while caira stopped and gave a surprise look, Mikel has allowed anyone other than himself ride in his car.

"Uhhh... thanks" caira answered still not sure of what mikel just said.

\*\*\*\*\*

Zoey stood fuming in anger immediately she sighted caira walking out of mikel's room, she was so certain that caira slept at mikel's room, because she has been monitoring her ever since she saw her walked into Mikel's room the previous day. She just didn't know what to do anymore, she was gradually losing Mikel and she didn't know what to do to make him stay with her, he was no longer interested in her body and it was obvious that he was gradually falling for the new maid. She can't frame her again because Mikel already threatened to fire her if she ever try to frame her up. At that moment, Killing her was the only thing niggling in

her mind.

...

..

Caira arrived home extremely exhausted, she knocked on mikel's door repeatedly but there was no response, so she assumed he wasn't in and opened the door. When she got in, she felt really hot and sweaty, so she decided to take a shower. she took of her clothes and proceeded into the bathroom, she had a long bath and came out with a towel tied around her chest, She was about grabbing her body lotion when she felt a hand around her waist, and a masculine voice whispering something into her ears.

"You kept me waiting" the voice said.....

Episode 35

Episode 35

Jace staggered back as he felt mikel's fist hit him

across the face, he was left in shock as he couldn't believe that Mikel would ever raise his hands on him, that has never happened before.

"Dude, did you just hit me?" Jace asked still in shock as he moved his finger to his lip and felt something dripping, he moved his hand down only to discover that his lip was bleeding.

"Jace, stay away from her, there many other maids in this mansion and....."

"How dare you hit me, I'm your elder brother!!!" Jace said as he also hit mikel.

He walked towards caira and jerked her hair really hard and attempted taking her with him but Mikel pulled him back abruptly and pushed him away. Things got heated up as the both brothers fought badly while caira stood at a far distance and watched them in confusion. She blamed her self for what happened but she didn't know if it was right for her to call for help or stop them. No!!, She

can't stop them, what if one of them eventually hurts her.

"Stop, that's enough!!!" Caira yelled out but they turned deaf ears to her.

Caira was still standing in contemplation when she saw Jace picked up a kitchen knife and threw it towards her. She watched as the knife flew in mid air and pierced into her left arm

Caira winced in pain immediately she felt the knife pierced into her skin, seeing the surprise look on mikel's face, Jace let out a look of satisfaction and walked out of the kitchen in contentment while Mikel rushed to caira.

"Are you okay?" Mikel asked trying to hold her injured arm but caira moved away in pain.

"I think so" Caira muttered in tears.

Mikel held her arm and tried taking her away but caira protested, but mikel insisted as he gripped

her forcefully and led her to his room. He got inside his room and locked the door with a key and inserted the key into his pocket. Caira walked to the door and attempted opening it but to no avail.

" let me out" caira said upon walking back to Mikel.

"You're not going out for now, it's for your own good" Mikel said as he walked to a drawer and brought out a small first aid box. Caira was about saying something else when he dragged her gently, making her to sit close to him on the bed. Mikel opened the first aid box and brought out a cotton wool, he held Caira's injured arm carefully while caira twitched in discomfort.

"Uhhh...there will be no need for that, it no big deal, it's just a little scratch, I can take good care of my self" caira said trying to withdraw her arm from mikel, but mikel ignored her as he proceeded by dabbing the cotton wool on the wounded spot carefully.

In less than 5 minutes, he was done, so he concluded his work by wrapping her arm with a bandage.

"Thank you" caira muttered nervously as Mikel packed up the first aid kit.

"For the time being, there will be no need for you to go back to your room, I'll send for your things to be brought to my room, you can share my room with me for now, I'll figure out how to deal with Jace" Mikel announced with a Stern look.

"No, I can't stay with you, I need to go back to work" caira said as she left the bed.

"I'm not asking you to stay, it's an order. As for your job, you don't need to worry about that because if Jace kills you, no one would ever notice your absence in the mansion apart from Dianna" Mikel uttered coldly.

Caira hesitated for a Little while and gave it a

second thought. What Mikel said did make a lot of sense, of course, she wasn't planning on going out there all alone, Jace almost killed her twice, but mikel was the reason she was still alive. In as much as she always wanted to avoid mikel, she still had to stay with him and figure out what to do next.

\*\*\*\*\*

Caira sat on mikel's couch as she watched him puffing out cigarette repeatedly. She was beginning to get bored and worried. Why must Mikel be so cold and boring?. She wasn't sure if she could bear to spend few more minutes with him..

"Uhhh... for how long will I be staying here?" caira asked fiddling with the tip of her dress.

"Are you bored" Mikel answered after some moments of silence.

"No, I was just curious" caira answered, but Mikel grabbed the TV remote and switch on the TV. Again,

He headed towards the kitchen and appeared with a popcorn.

"Here you go, I know you're bored" Mikel said as he handed over the popcorn to caira while she collected it with a heart of gratitude.

Mikel inserted a CD in the DVD player and turned it on while caira watched curiously. They both sat quietly together as they watched the movie with keen interest. Caira seemed to be really interested in the movie as she grabbed a little quantity of the popcorn into her mouth at regular intervals, the movie had barely ended when she unconsciously fell asleep on mikel's shoulder.

\*\*\*\*\*

Caira waked up late the following morning with slight pains on her back. She turned around and found Mikel sitting on the with his phone on his hand. she turned around and was gobsmacked when she found out that it was already five



minutes past seven. How did she sleep so long, and Mikel didn't even bother to wake her up.

"Good morning, is this clock working perfectly....I mean, is the time really 7:05am?" Caira asked still in shock.

"Obviously" Mikel answered with his eyes fixed on his phone.

"Oh my goodness, I'm running late for school" caira said as she stood up in a haste and headed towards the bathroom. Lucky, her toothbrush, soap, body lotion and all her stuffs was already in the room.

"Go make me breakfast first" Mikel said adding more to Caira's frustration.

"I'm so sorry sir, I'll ask someone else to prepare you breakfast, I really need to get ready for school" caira answered in a haste to get into the bathroom

"No, I want you to make it your self, I'm not asking

for too much, just a cup of coffee." Mikel said with a shrug while caira walked to kitchen begrudgingly. Caira was about leaving when Mikel called her back.

"Wait, you can call me Mikel, you don't really have to act formerly towards me." Mikel said without even sparing her a side glance while Caira muttered an "okay sir" and headed to the kitchen.

In no time, caira was done preparing his coffee, she took her bath and prepared hurriedly while Mikel sat on the bed making a phone call.

"I just asked my driver to drop you off at school" Mikel said upon ending the call while caira stopped and gave a surprise look, Mikel has allowed anyone other than himself ride in his car.

"Uhhh... thanks" caira answered still not sure of what mikel just said.

\*\*\*\*\*

Zoey stood fuming in anger immediately she sighted caira walking out of mikel's room, she was so certain that caira slept at mikel's room, because she has been monitoring her ever since she saw her walked into Mikel's room the previous day. She just didn't know what to do anymore, she was gradually losing Mikel and she didn't know what to do to make him stay with her, he was no longer interested in her body and it was obvious that he was gradually falling for the new maid. She can't frame her again because Mikel already threatened to fire her if she ever try to frame her up. At that moment, Killing her was the only thing niggling in her mind.

...

..

Caira arrived home extremely exhausted, she knocked on mikel's door repeatedly but there was no response, so she assumed he wasn't in and

opened the door. When she got in, she felt really hot and sweaty, so she decided to take a shower. she took off her clothes and proceeded into the bathroom, she had a long bath and came out with a towel tied around her chest, She was about grabbing her body lotion when she felt a hand around her waist, and a masculine voice whispering something into her ears.

"You kept me waiting" the voice said..... U

Jace staggered back as he felt mikel's fist hit him across the face, he was left in shock as he couldn't believe that Mikel would ever raise his hands on him, that has never happened before.

"Dude, did you just hit me?" Jace asked still in shock as he moved his finger to his lip and felt something dripping, he moved his hand down only to discover that his lip was bleeding.

"Jace, stay away from her, there many other maids in this mansion and.....

"How dare you hit me, I'm your elder brother!!!"  
Jace said as he also hit mikel.

He walked towards caira and jerked her hair really hard and attempted taking her with him but Mikel pulled him back abruptly and pushed him away. Things got heated up as the both brothers fought badly while caira stood at a far distance and watched them in confusion. She blamed her self for what happened but she didn't know if it was right for her to call for help or stop them. No!!, She can't stop them, what if one of them eventually hurts her.

"Stop, that's enough!!!" Caira yelled out but they turned deaf ears to her.

Caira was still standing in contemplation when she saw Jace picked up a kitchen knife and threw it towards her. She watched as the knife flew in mid air and pierced into her left arm

Caira winced in pain immediately she felt the knife

pierced into her skin, seeing the surprise look on mikel's face, Jace let out a look of satisfaction and walked out of the kitchen in contentment while Mikel rushed to caira.

"Are you okay?" Mikel asked trying to hold her injured arm but caira moved away in pain.

"I think so" Caira muttered in tears.

Mikel held her arm and tried taking her away but caira protested, but mikel insisted as he gripped her forcefully and led her to his room. He got inside his room and locked the door with a key and inserted the key into his pocket. Caira walked to the door and attempted opening it but to no avail.

" let me out" caira said upon walking back to Mikel.

"You're not going out for now, it's for your own good" Mikel said as he walked to a drawer and brought out a small first aid box. Caira was about saying something else when he dragged her gently,

making her to sit close to him on the bed. Mikel opened the first aid box and brought out a cotton wool, he held Caira's injured arm carefully while caira twitched in discomfort.

"Uhhh...there will be no need for that, it no big deal, it's just a little scratch, I can take good care of my self" caira said trying to withdraw her arm from mikel, but mikel ignored her as he proceeded by dabbing the cotton wool on the wounded spot carefully.

In less than 5 minutes, he was done, so he concluded his work by wrapping her arm with a bandage.

"Thank you" caira muttered nervously as Mikel packed up the first aid kit.

"For the time being, there will be no need for you to go back to your room, I'll send for your things to be brought to my room, you can share my room with me for now, I'll figure out how to deal with

Jace" Mikel announced with a Stern look.

"No, I can't stay with you, I need to go back to work" caira said as she left the bed.

"I'm not asking you to stay, it's an order. As for your job, you don't need to worry about that because if Jace kills you, no one would ever notice your absence in the mansion apart from Dianna" Mikel uttered coldly.

Caira hesitated for a Little while and gave it a second thought. What Mikel said did make a lot of sense, of course, she wasn't planning on going out there all alone, Jace almost killed her twice, but mikel was the reason she was still alive. In as much as she always wanted to avoid mikel, she still had to stay with him and figure out what to do next.

\*\*\*\*\*

Caira sat on mikel's couch as she watched him puffing out cigarette repeatedly. She was



beginning to get bored and worried. Why must Mikel be so cold and boring?. She wasn't sure if she could bear to spend few more minutes with him..

"Uhhh... for how long will I be staying here?" caira asked fiddling with the tip of her dress.

"Are you bored" Mikel answered after some moments of silence.

"No, I was just curious" caira answered, but Mikel grabbed the TV remote and switch on the TV. Again, He headed towards the kitchen and appeared with a popcorn.

"Here you go, I know you're bored" Mikel said as he handed over the popcorn to caira while she collected it with a heart of gratitude.

Mikel inserted a CD in the DVD player and turned it on while caira watched curiously. They both sat quietly together as they watched the movie with keen interest. Caira seemed to be really interested

in the movie as she grabbed a little quantity of the popcorn into her mouth at regular intervals, the movie had barely ended when she unconsciously fell asleep on mikel's shoulder.

\*\*\*\*\*

Caira waked up late the following morning with slight pains on her back. She turned around and found Mikel sitting on the with his phone on his hand. she turned around and was gobsmacked when she found out that it was already five minutes past seven. How did she sleep so long, and Mikel didn't even bother to wake her up.

"Good morning, is this clock working perfectly....I mean, is the time really 7:05am?" Caira asked still in shock.

"Obviously" Mikel answered with his eyes fixed on his phone.

"Oh my goodness, I'm running late for school"

caira said as she stood up in a haste and headed towards the bathroom. Lucky, her toothbrush, soap, body lotion and all her stuffs was already in the room.

"Go make me breakfast first" Mikel said adding more to Caira's frustration.

"I'm so sorry sir, I'll ask someone else to prepare you breakfast, I really need to get ready for school" caira answered in a haste to get into the bathroom

"No, I want you to make it your self, I'm not asking for too much, just a cup of coffee." Mikel said with a shrug while caira walked to kitchen begrudgingly. Caira was about leaving when Mikel called her back.

"Wait, you can call me Mikel, you don't really have to act formally towards me." Mikel said without even sparing her a side glance while Caira muttered an "okay sir" and headed to the kitchen.

In no time, caira was done preparing his coffee, she took her bath and prepared hurriedly while Mikel sat on the bed making a phone call.

"I just asked my driver to drop you off at school" Mikel said upon ending the call while caira stopped and gave a surprise look, Mikel has allowed anyone other than himself ride in his car.

"Uhhh... thanks" caira answered still not sure of what mikel just said.

\*\*\*\*\*

Zoey stood fuming in anger immediately she sighted caira walking out of mikel's room, she was so certain that caira slept at mikel's room, because she has been monitoring her ever since she saw her walked into Mikel's room the previous day. She just didn't know what to do anymore, she was gradually losing Mikel and she didn't know what to do to make him stay with her, he was no longer interested in her body and it was obvious that he

was gradually falling for the new maid. She can't frame her again because Mikel already threatened to fire her if she ever try to frame her up. At that moment, Killing her was the only thing niggling in her mind.

...

..

Caira arrived home extremely exhausted, she knocked on mikel's door repeatedly but there was no response, so she assumed he wasn't in and opened the door. When she got in, she felt really hot and sweaty, so she decided to take a shower. she took of her clothes and proceeded into the bathroom, she had a long bath and came out with a towel tied around her chest, She was about grabbing her body lotion when she felt a hand around her waist, and a masculine voice whispering something into her ears.

"You kept me waiting" the voice said.....

TBC

My better half

Highschool crush

By Authoress Prudence

Episode 34

Silence stepped in as soon as caira's eyes met with Dianna.

"Uhhh.. how long have you been standing there?"  
Caira asked breaking the silence.

"I just came in now, what were you guys talking about?" Dianna asked.

"Nothing serious" caira said walking away while Dianna followed behind her.

"I can see, you both are really getting along"  
Dianna said with a chuckle.

"Dianna, can we please talk tomorrow morning?,  
I'm really exhausted and I really need to get some

rest" caira said as soon as she got to her room

"Oh, alright then, I'll see you tomorrow morning"

Dianna said as she left caira's room.

As soon as Dianna left her room, caira changed her wet dress and underthings. when she was done, she laid on the bed facing the ceiling as she began thinking about what mess she has gotten herself into, her biggest mistake was accepting to work in the mansion. Jace and Mikel are just the same thing, she has no one to help her. still couldn't believe that Jace almost killed her. If no one has knocked on the door, she would've probably been drowned by now.

She stayed up for quite a long time until she slept off.

\*\*\*\*\*

The next morning, Jace paced round his room restlessly, he couldn't believe he let her go easily

just because Mikel told him to do so. Who is Mikel to tell him what to do. No!!, Mikel was his junior brother and he can't do what Mikel asked him to do, he can't stay away from caira, he was sure ready for whatever comes his way. He only have a few weeks before he leaves for America, and it will be a waste of Time if he fail to have a one night stand with caira.

"

"

Mikel sat in his room fuming in anger as he recalled what happened the previous night. What actually happened between Jace and caira while they were together in the room?, Jace can not be easily convinced. He knew that he isn't caira's boyfriend and doesn't have the right to tell her what to do and who to get intimate with, but he's her boss and he has the right to fire her if she doesn't abide by his rules. He still couldn't believe that caira shut



him off when he asked her about her whereabouts the previous night. He also couldn't understand why he was upset with caira's presence in his brother's room, which made him felt like paying her back for her actions. He was still deep in thoughts when Zoey walked in.

"Sir, you sent for me" Zoey said walking into the room

"Yes I did" Mikel said as he walked to her and wrapped his hands around her waist while Zoey smiled broadly. Mikel reached for her lip and kissed her slowly, Zoey got excited as she took off her clothes gradually and when she was completely undressed, Mikel pushed her to the bed and got on top of her, he maintained the kiss as he held Zoey's right leg up while Zoey moaned out in pleasure. Suddenly, their good moments was interrupted when the door went open revealing caira who was holding a tray containing

a bottle of wine and an empty glass. The tray and all its contents came crashing on the floor as caira stood in shock.

"Get out, jezz!!" Zoey yelled out, bringing caira back to reality as caira picked up the tray and left. Mikel smirked in satisfaction immediately caira left as he left Zoey on the bed and picked up his shirt.

"Babe, she's gone, let's get back to business" Zoey said as she left the bed and wrapped her hands around Mikel's shoulder, but Mikel pushed her hands down and headed out.

\*\*\*\*\*

As soon as caira left the room, she walked to the kitchen and picked up a tomato and a chopper. She proceeded by chopping the tomatoes into tiny pieces but she was distracted when she felt something running down her cheek, she moved her fingers to her face and touched it only to discover that she was already in tears. What she

couldn't understand was why she was crying. Mikel didn't do anything bad right?, Mikel wasn't even her boyfriend, so why would she care about who he gets intimate with?, She was nobody to him, so it doesn't matter if he sex her and sex another lady. She was still deep in thought when she heard someone Walk into the kitchen, she turned around and was surprised to see Mikel.

"What do you want here?" Caira asked trying hard to withhold her tears

"I asked for a bottle of wine and a cup on my table, but I only got a broken bottles lying on the entrance to my room, so I came to get it my self. Do you have a problem with that?" Mikel asked with a smirk as he opened the kitchen cupboard and brought out a glass cup.

"I'm sorry, I'll come clean up the broken bottles" caira said with a sniff

"So tell me, how does it feel" Mikel asked leaning

towards the kitchen table with his gaze on her.

"What? I don't know what you're talking about" caira said pretending not to know what he was talking about.

"How does it feel to be stabbed in the heart!! Caira, I kept you in this mansion not because of anything but because of the service you offer to me and me alone, I wouldn't tolerate you fucking around with my brother, if you feel like you can mess around behind my back, then prepare to loose your job, you can never be my last option." Mikel said with an upset look

"If you're doing this because of what happened yesterday then you must be mistaken, nothing happened between me and Jace, he.....

"That's fine, who cares anyway, I don't give a damn if you have an affair with him" Mikel interrupted her rudely

"Yes, we're not even dating, so why should you even care about what I do with my body" caira said hitting the chopper on the table.

"You're right, you are free to throw your body cheaply at him. you're nothing but a whore, you're so pathetic!" Mikel stated coldly. Immediately Mikel said that, caira couldn't help but let the tears fall freely down her cheek. Mikel felt guilty about what he said, so he walked towards caira in attempt to apologise but she got hold of the chopper and directed it towards Mikel's face.

"Stay away from me, I'm warning you!!" Caira said pointing the knife towards Mikel but Mikel advanced towards caira, making her to take a step back.

"I'll stab you, I'm serious, leave now" caira said as she held the knife with shaky hands, making Mikel to smile. Mikel walked closer to her and grabbed the knife carefully from her. he held her waist and

pulled her closer to him, and slowly, Mikel reached for her lips and gave her a deep kiss, they were both lust in the feeling forgetting that they were in the kitchen and anyone can walk in at any time. They were still enjoying their good moments when they heard someone Walk in, caira broke the kiss quickly and turned around to see who walked in, she was shocked beyond her bones when she saw Jace walking into the kitchen.

"I guess this was the reason you didn't report back to my bedroom like I instructed" Jace said walking in

"Jace, what did you want from her" Mikel asked while caira got behind him for coverage but Jace walked towards caira and attempted pulling her hair but Mikel landed a heavy Punch on his face and pushed him away.

TBC

My Better Half

## Highschool crush

By authoress Prudence

### Episode 37

"I'm pregnant!!" Caira said almost in a whisper. Mikel's eyes glinted in shock when she said that. Silence stepped in as they both stared at each other without saying anything for a while.

"Wait, you're joking right? This is just one of your usual pranks, right?" Mikel asked still in shock.

"I wish it was a prank" caira said worriedly. Mikel stared at her quietly for a while and walked out of the room without saying anything further.

Immediately he left the room, caira knew that she was doomed, she laid on the bed quietly and cried her eyes out.

Zoey felt a sting in her heart when she heard caira said to Mikel that she was pregnant, she really did underestimate this caira girl, she really got nerves.

Zoey and Mikel has been making out even before caira came to the mansion and she has never gotten pregnant for him. She really needed to think fast and device a way to eliminate her and the bastard child she was carrying.

\*\*\*\*\*

Mikel sat at the bar with a glass of wine on his left hand, he picked up his phone and dialed Caira's number, and she picked on the first beep, like she've actually been waiting for his call.

"Hello, where are you" caira said in a teary voice.

"Meet me at Blaze jewel, we need to talk" Mikel said as he ended the call. In less than 1 hour time, caira was nicely dressed and was in the club. She scoured her eyes around the room in search of Mikel and sighted him sitting at a table in the corner of the hall.

"I'm here, what do you want to us to talk about"



caira asked upon walking to Mikel.

"Have your seat" Mikel said while caira sat down.

"What do you care for?" Mikel asked.

"Thank you, I'm fine. What would you like to say"  
caira asked again.

"Were you really serious when you said you were pregnant?" Mikel asked sipping from his glass of wine.

"Once again, YES" caira responded.

"What are you planning to do with the child, do you want to keep the child" Mikel asked coldly

"Uhhh...what do you mean by that?" Caira asked, already knowing where he was heading to.

"You know exactly what I'm talking about, are you planning to keep the child?" Mikel asked again

"Of course, I'm not a murderer, do you expect me to kill my own child?" Caira said in anger

"Caira you can't do it, you can't carry this child, you are too young for this, so abort it!!" Mikel said trying to control his temper.

"Really, I'm too young to carry a child, but I'm not too young to be your sex doll!! What were you thinking when you were using me without protections, not minding if I'll get pregnant?, I'm pregnant and I'm keeping this child, and you must play a role as a father in this child's life!!!" Caira said with a teary eyes.

"Do you know what this will cost you? You can't seat for grade 12 final exams if you don't abort it, and I'm not prepared to bear the burden with you. C'mon caira, abort it and let's go back to the way we used to be" Mikel said as he held caira's hands, but caira pulled out her hands quickly.

"You're nothing but a cold hearted monster, thank you Soo much for ruining my life" caira said as she stood up and picked up her purse, she was about

leaving when she suddenly turn around to say something else.

"One more thing, you don't need to be scared or worried about your reputation, I won't mention your name, it's my decision and I'll bear it alone" caira said as she walked away in tears.

### THE\_NEXT\_MORNING

caira woke up the next morning with a swollen eyes, she assumed it was as a result of her cry. she walked to her window and sat down alone, she was actually in her bedroom, she already packed out of Mikel's room, he only told her to share a room with him, so he can have the opportunity to use her at anytime, he never really provided any solution to her problem with Jace. Indeed, Kylee was right, Mikel was a play boy and can never fall for a commoner like her, he was only using her, Kylee was also right when she said she was so cheap. The only thing Mikel ever cared about was

his fame. Caira was brought out of her thoughts when she heard a knock on the door.

"Who's there and how can I help you?" caira asked wiping her tears.

"Madam asked me to inform you that breakfast is ready" the maid said behind the door.

"I'll be down in a minute" caira responded. Caira walked into the bathroom, brushed her teeth and had a quick bath, when she was done, she headed to her room, opened her old cupboard and pulled out an envelope and proceeded downstairs.

When she got downstairs, she met madam Caroline, Dianna and Mikel eating in the dinning room, Mikel's eyes caught with her's, but she diverted her stares quickly.

"Good morning ma'am" caira greeted with a bow, upon walking to madam Caroline.

"Good morning dear" please have your seat"

madam Caroline said with a smile.

"Caira, I reserved a seat for you, come sit here"  
Dianna said ushering caira to a seat close to her,  
but caira declined.

"Thank you ma'am, without wasting much of your  
time, I have a request to make" caira said handing  
over an envelope to madam Caroline. Madam  
Caroline opened the later and read through it, and  
a gasp escaped her lips, making Mikel curious.

"Caira, why do you want to resign, is there any  
problem" madam Caroline asked while Mikel and  
Dianna looked up in surprise

"Caira, why are you resigning?" asked as she  
placed down her cutleries and focused on caira

"Is the pay not enough, or is the chores too much  
for you to handle, tell me, I can increase your pay  
and lessen your chores." Madam Caroline asked  
worriedly.

"Thank you ma'am, but the pay is just fine and my chores are not too much for me, I'm just home sick and will like to see my mom " caira lied

"That's not an issue caira, if you are homesick, you can just inform me and I'll give you some weeks off, depending on how long you want to stay back at home" madam Caroline said calmly

"I'll be going for a very long time and I don't know when I'll be back, so I thought it would be nice if I resign" caira said with a fake smile

"Ohh, okay. If that's the case, then I can't stop you, you can begin your work leave tomorrow but I won't deny you your salary, you are still entitled to your monthly salary. I'll be expecting you soon, but please try to visit us whenever you're free" madam Caroline also said with a smile.

"Thank you for your kindness ma'am, I'll come over at my own free time. I'll resume work as soon as I'm ready" caira said gratefully.

As Soon as caira left, Dianna who went numb the whole time finally found her tongue.

"Mum, I have a feeling caira won't come back"  
Dianna muttered sadly

"Well,. I have no choice Danny, I can't stop her from going home, she has been away from her family for a pretty long time" madam Caroline replied with a shrug

\*

\*

\*

\*

Caira packed up her stuffs in preparation to leave the next day, as she did, she felt so worried and disappointed in her self, what will be her mother's reaction when she gets to find out that she was pregnant, and how will she tell her mom that she was pregnant for her best friend's son. She was

still deep in thoughts when she heard a knock on the door.

"Who's it" caira asked

"It's me, Dianna" Dianna answered behind the door.

"Come in, it's open" caira said while Dianna opened the door and walked in.

"Caira, when will you be back?" Dianna said as she sat on caira's bed.

"I'll be back in few months" caira replied

"no caira, I want you to be specific" Dianna said whining

"Okay, I'll be back in 2 months" caira said with a smile, she actually said it to avoid Dianna's pestering. she didn't actually plan on ever coming back.

"That is quite a long time, I guess I will just have to



go back to my lonely days till you come back"  
Dianna said solemnly.

"You don't need to be worried Danny, you won't be lonely, we'll always see in school" caira said while Dianna nodded and left the bed.

"I'll miss you caira" Dianna muttered as she turned the door knob and left caira's room.

"I'll miss you too" caira muttered to her self as Soon as Dianna left her room.

As soon as Dianna left caira's room, caira heard a knock on the door.

"Come in" caira said assuming it was still Dianna, but to her atmost surprise, Mikel walked in. They stared directly at each other for a pretty long time until caira broke the eye contact.

"What do you want from me, are you here to force me to abort my baby before I leave?" Caira asked as she stared down.

"No, I'm not. You aren't planning on ever coming back, right?" Mikel asked with a Stern look.

"Never, I just want to be away from you forever" caira said trying hard to control her tears.

"I Know you hate me for....."

"Yes, I do" caira interrupted rudely.

"I just want to let you know that I love you caira, and I wouldn't want anything to come in between us" Mikel said while caira laughed out sarcastically.

"Really, if you truly love me as you claim, then prove it. Mikel, you dragged me into this mess I'm into, I'm just asking you to admit your responsibility, is that too much to ask for?" Caira said as tears roll down her cheeks.

"How do you want me to support you, financially?. If you need some money, you can always....."

"You Know, this is why I hate you more, you think your money can solve everything. You don't care

about anyone, all you ever care about is your fame and reputation!!!...." Caira yelled out unconsciously, but Mikel shut her up with a deep kiss, it was more like he enchanted her, because caira went silent as soon as she felt his lips on hers. Mikel moved his hands to her hips but caira broke the kiss and tried pushing him away, but Mikel grasped her waist really tight.

"Caira, please get rid of the child and let's go back to the way we used be" Mikel whispered to caira.

TBC..

My better half

Highschool crush

By Authoress Prudence

Episode 38

Caira and her mom sat in the dinningroom as they eat their meal in silence, it's been two days ever since caira came back home, she seemed to be lost

in thought as they ate, her mother watched her closely, observing that she wasn't as lively as she used to be.

"Darling, why aren't you eating your food, is there anything wrong with the food?" caira's mom asked placing down her cutleries, but caira seemed to be lost in thoughts as she only stared at her food strangely

"Caira!! What is wrong with you, ever since you came back from the mansion, you have been behaving strangely" caira's mom asked again, bringing caira out of deep thoughts.

"Nothing mom" caira replied

"You can't tell me \*Nothing\*, you haven't even touched your food yet" caira's mom said

"It's fine mom, I'll eat up now" caira said taking a full spoon of noodles into her mouth

"Ok, by the way caira, you haven't told me why you

left the mansion" her mum said

"Well, like I said, I was missing you, so I applied for a work leave" caira said with a fake smile.

"And how many days are you intending staying home" Her mom asked suspiciously

\*Maybe a year" caira announced

"What!!! Caira, why would you leave your job for a year, what if they find someone to replace you?"

her mom asked

"Mom, don't you miss me" caira asked

"I do honey, but I'm worried about your education, you're in your final grades and you'll be graduating soon, I don't....."

She was still explaining when caira felt the urge to puke again, she stood up abruptly and ran to the toilet, her mom stood up almost immediately and walked to the toilet to meet her, she stood behind caira and watched her in bemusement.

"Caira, what's the problem baby, are you sick" caira's mum asked concerned while caira washed up and walked out of the toilet with a worried expression.

"Mom, I have something really important to tell you, I know you will be really mad and disappointed in me, but it's something that can't be hidden" caira said as she walked out of the toilet and stood behind the dinning chair.

"What's that dear" caira's mom asked, curiosity written all over her face.

"I'm pregnant" caira muttered solemnly as she bowed her head in shame and await her mother's reaction.

\*\*\*\*\*

Mikel sat at the basement as he dialed caira's number repeatedly, but it wasn't reachable. could she have blacklisted him? If she really did, how was

he supposed to find her. He had no idea on where she lives, and he really needed to see her and apologize for his attitude. No doubts, he failed her, he promised her the entire world but here he is, denying his responsibility. Ever since caira left him, things had been so difficult and he couldn't help but think about her every miserable day that passed by. He was indeed in love with her, which was definitely not part of the plan. The plan was getting her to trust him with her body and drilling her wet hole. But the more he had sex with her, the more he keeps wanting her and falling deeply for her. At first, he thought it was just mere infatuation, so he tried fighting the feelings he had for her, but it turns out that he needed her more than he can ever imagine. He needed to find a way to see her, even if it takes asking Dianna if she had any idea on where caira was living. Mikel stood up and headed towards Dianna's room. When he got to her room, he gave it a knock and Dianna's voice was heard

ushering him in, Mikel walked in on her approval and met her sitting on the bed with a teddy on her hands.

"Hey, why are you all alone in your room" Mikel asked trying to play nice.

"Where do you expect me to be and who do you expect me to be with? You've succeeded in chasing my only friend away, so there is no one for me to talk to." Dianna said pathetically.

"Ok Dianna, can we not go back to this again, for the last time, I didn't chase caira away, okay? She voluntarily left" Mikel said already pissed.

"If you hadn't been rude to her, she would not have left all of a sudden" Dianna said

"I'm really not in the mood for this. when you and caira use to be together, did she by any means tell you where she was living?" Mikel asked

"No, I have no idea about where she lives" Dianna



answered sincerely, but her reply only got him pissed.

"Seriously, you call her your friend, but you don't even know where she lives? What do you guys ever talk about?" Mikel uttered in frustration.

"You claimed that you love her but you didn't even bother asking her where she lives, what sort of a boyfriend are you, huh?" Dianna fired back.

Mikel went mute immediately Dianna said that. She was indeed correct, he never bothered to ask her about any personal questions about herself, he turned back and was about leaving when Dianna spoke out

"If you want to find her, you can probably ask one of your driver's who drove her home to visit her mom last weekend" Dianna said

"Who's the driver?" Mikel asked eagerly.

"I don't know, go find him. but can I come with

you?. I've not seen caira in school ever since she left and her number isn't reachable, so I'll like to find out what the problem is" Dianna said hopefully

"No, stay back home" Mikel muttered and left her room.

"Damn it!!! I shouldn't have given him any clue, this guy is just too rude and inconsiderate" Dianna muttered in disappointment as soon as Mikel left her room.

Few\_months\_later

Caira ran back home as fast as her legs could carry her, being pregnant wasn't as easy as she thought, her present condition has turned her into a laughingstock and a topic of discussion in the small town where she lives. Her tummy was gradually getting bigger and everyone was beginning to suspect that she was pregnant, she was almost close to the house when she heard

someone calling after her, she turned back only to find Becca running after her, she heaved a sigh of relief when she saw that it was Becca, she actually thought that it was some random mockers who derived pleasure in making jest of her.

"Oh, Becca, it's been a while, how've you been" Caira asked with a smile but Becca only scoured her eyes around Caira's body, particularly her Tommy, and when she was done, she let out a smirk of satisfaction.

"Caira, why were you running, you shouldn't be running in your present condition, do you want the poor baby to get uncomfortable?" Becca muttered sarcastically

"Uhhh... thank you for your concern Becca, but I'm just fine" Caira answered with an embarrassed smile.

"And the baby?" Becca asked with a smirk

"The baby is fine. Why don't you come with me to the house, it'll be more convenient for us to talk inside" caira asked trying to walk away, but becca pulled her back rudely.

" They'll be no need for that lovely, I love discussing in public. So it was true all along?" Becca asked as she folded her arms beneath her breast.

"Uhhh...I don't get it, what was true?" Caira asked in confusion.

"It was true that you went to the Camford's mansion and served as a sex worker? It was true that you left Noah and went sleeping around with all the guys in the Camford's mansion?" Becca asked while caira furrowed her brows in confusion.

"Becca, how can you say such a thing to me? I don't know who told you all these lies about me, but it wasn't true, and I never expected that you're ever try to make jest of me!!" Caira said still

shocked by what Becca said

"You're so pathetic, have a nice day and take good care of your baby" Becca said as she left with a look of contentment. As soon as Becca left, Caira withheld her tears and ran back home. When she got home, she shut the door behind her and allowed the tears fall freely down her cheek, the humiliation was just too much for her to deal with. She sat on the floor and cried out helplessly, she was still crying when she felt an arm on her shoulder, she looked up and saw her mum standing beside her, her mom lowered her self to her and used her palm to wipe her tears

"I'm sorry darling, I'm so sorry for raising my voice at you earlier" her mom uttered as she used her palm to wipe her tears.

"I'm so sorry for dragging our family's name into the mud, I'm sorry for the disappointment and embarrassment I've cost you" Caira said in tears.

"No sweetie, everyone makes mistake, no one is above mistake and I'm in no place to judge you" her mom said stroking her hair gently. For some moments, they were both silent as they were not saying anything to each other, but caira's mom broke the silence.

"Darling, there is something that's really bothering me and I'll like you to be sincere with me" caira's mum said still stroking caira's hair.

""What's that Mom" caira asked as she Fred her self from her mother's arm.

"I'll like to know who the father of the child you're carrying is?" Her mom asked concerned. Caira felt a sting in her heart when her mother said that. She promised to keep Mikel's identity a secret and she didn't think it was right to tell her mom that the son of her most trusted friend was the one who got her pregnant, that'll definitely destroy their relationship.

"Caira, I think it's wise if I you tell me. was it Noah?" caira's mom asked again. Caira was silent for a while until she finally decided to answer her

"Yes it was Noah, he is the father if my unborn baby" caira lied out of pressure.

TBC.....

My Better Half

Highschool crush

By Authoress Prudence.

Episode 36

Caira about grabbing her towel when she felt a hand around her waist, she turned around in fear and saw Mikel, she let out a sheepish smile when she saw Mikel standing behind her.

"I didn't see you in class today" caira muttered nervously.

"I decided to take a day off" Mikel said trailing his

fingers round her body. Mikel moved his fingers down her bare belly bringing cold shivers down her spine. He moved his face to her shoulders and kissed her at the side of her neck, eating deep into the hollows of her neck, caira couldn't help but let out a light moan. He moved his hands again to her chest and untie her towel gradually.

\*\*\*\*\*

## FEW\_WEEKS\_LATER

Caira rounded off her work in the laundry and headed back to mikel's room, it's been 2 weeks since she began sharing a bedroom with Mikel and the past days has been one of the most beautiful moments of her life. Sharing a room with mikel really saved her the headache of thinking about Jace threats on her life and also help her understand Mikel the more. She got to find out that Mikel wasn't as bad as she thought. He was such a cool and romantic guy. they were already



into each other and Caira's feelings for him grew on a daily basis, Mikel equally seemed to be really interested in her. She got into his room and threw her tired self on his sofa.

"I told you not to bother about the house chores, there are many other maids and they can get it done" Mikel said advancing towards caira.

"Well, I just can't sit and watch others work, what if someone notice my absence" caira answered with a shrug.

Mikel dressed up in a black outfit, while caira watched him in admiration. She still couldn't understand why he was just so perfect in her sight. He finalized his preparation as he picked up his car key on the table.

"Where are you going, looking all....."

"Handsome" Mikel asked while caira smiled

"Yeah" caira replied.

"I'm having a photo shoot in 15 minutes, I'll be back by evening" Mikel answered.

"Seriously? You promised we were going to visit the ice cream store this evening, and now you won't be back till evening" caira said with a pout

"Don't worry, I'll be back before then" Mikel said as he gave her a peck on her forehead.

"Don't forget to lock the door" Mikel said again as he left the room. As soon as Mikel left the room, caira smiled broadly to her self, her relationship with Mikel was just like a dream come true. Mikel really help her in getting over the thought of Noah. She stood up and was about locking the door when she felt a heavy urge to puke, she quickly ran into the washroom and emptied her bowel. She washed her face and flushed the toilet.

"Gosh, what the hell is wrong with me" caira muttered quietly as she walked out of the washroom in shock. She has been feeling dizzy and

weak lately, but took it rather too lightly. she was beginning to get worried because she was not getting any better, her condition seemed to get worse on daily basis. She managed to move her heavy body to Dianna's room, she was bored and needed someone to talk to.

Dianna let out a mischievous smile upon seeing Caira's face, which got caira Wondering what she was up to again.

"What's that look about, what are you hiding" caira asked as she sat on Dianna's bed.

"Well, I should be the one asking you that question, what are you and my brother hiding" Dianna asked smiling broadly.

"Uhhh.. what do you mean by that" caira asked, pretending not to know what she was talking about.

"I've been watching you and Mikel lately, and I'm

really certain that there is something going on between the both of you" Dianna said again as she placed her both palm on her chin and stared directly at caira

"There is nothing going on between us trust me!!" Caira said visibly blushing.

"C'mon caira, tell me everything. Mikel might be acting like a jerk but trust me, he is really a sweet guy, you won't regret dating him" Dianna said as she held Caira's hands.

"Stop it Danny, we aren't dating yet. If you have nothing else to do, I don't feel well and I'll like to go to the hospital" caira said with a smile as she left Dianna's bed, she was about leaving when Dianna spoke out.

"Take good care of yourself, and remember, my brother loves you" Dianna yelled out while caira left with a shy smile. As soon as caira left Dianna's room, she checked outside the packing lot but

couldn't find Jace car, good thing he wasn't home. She had a shower and left for the hospital. she was on her way going to tell hospital when her mother's call came in.

"Hello baby, I've been trying to reach you for some hours now" her mum said over the phone.

"Sorry mum, my battery was dead" Caira replied.

"Okay dear, I just wanna check on you, I miss you so much, so do Kylee. She is presently in the house helping me out with the house chores" her mum said over the phone

"Really, awwn... that's so sweet of her, anyways, I am free today and I'm heading towards the hospital, I'll come check on you guys first" Caira said with a smile

"The hospital, what's going on, are you feeling unwell?" Her mom asked sounding really worried.

"It's no big deal mom, I've been feeling weak lately,

but I think I'm just stressed up. I'll be fine, we'll talk Better when I get home" Caira replied

"Okay sweetie, I just prepared your favorite, hurry up because Kylee is about to finish the entire meal" her mom said teasingly.

"Oh my goodness, I'm so killing her when I get home. Love you, bye" Caira muttered happily as she ended the call.

"Sir, can you please change your direction to Darangee village? I'll like to see my family first" Caira said to the driver while he nodded in affirmation.

They drove down to a shopping mall at darangee village and purchased some things for her mum and Kylee, And finally, they headed to darangee village where her family lived. As soon as they arrived home, Caira stepped out of the car, Kylee was the first person who ran out of the house in joy to meet Caira.

"Oh my goodness, Caira, you look so good. I missed you so much, you were not taking any of my calls" Kylee squealed as she held Caira's hands.

"I'm sorry once again, we do have a lot of things to talk in private, but before that, I got you and mum some things, you can get it in the car" Caira said happily while Kylee ran to the car and brought out all the stuff. Her mom welcome her warmly and they all ate and chat happily as a family.

"So, tell me Caira, how is your job in the mansion, do they treat you well?" Her mum asked as she poured some water into Caira's mug.

"No mum, you can count on your friend. Madam Caroline is so nice and warm. She treats me just like her own daughter, and her children are the best. Dianna is really a sweet girl, she is so nice and humble. And Mikel.....he is just the best, when I first started the job, he used to be bossy and always pushing me around, but I think we're both

into each other now, he is so friendly and caring"  
Caira said with a smile

"Good to hear that dear, I knew Caroline is a very nice woman, we grew up together and I know her children will be too" her mom said. They all ate their meal in silence, and when they were done, Kylee held Caira's hand and led her to the bedroom, where they both sat on the bed in joy.

"Okay, I'm really curious right now, what do you want to tell me about?" Kylee asked curiously.

"Well, nothing serious. It's just about my biggest celebrity crush" Caira said

"Mikel Camford?" Kylee asked

"Of course,... guess what?" Caira asked

"What" Kylee answered with curiosity written over her face.

"Well, we are officially in a very intimate relationship now, we are presently sharing the



same bedroom and trust me, he's super nice and cute. I don't know what's happening to be, but I think I'm in love with him, though, I'm not sure about how he sees me but I do know what I feel for him" Caira said blushing really hard

"Hmm, that's great Caira, but are you sure he loves you the same way you love him? Mikel is the greatest Playboy of all kind and think about it, he is also a celebrity and a public figure. He has so many rich and classy girls around him. Selena Madison is a very beautiful and hot fashion model and she's so rich, the internet has it that they're dating, c'mon girl!!! People like mikel can't be trusted!!" Kylee said with a serious look.

"C'mon Kylee, 90% of the news on the internet are fake news, Mikel isn't dating anyone and I'm sure of that. I just want to give him a try" Caira answered.

"Okay Caira, I just don't want you to face any heart

break again. I hope that he doesn't turn out to be what you never expected" Kylee said with a smile.

"Yeah, I also hope so. To be honest with you, I'm really scared of disappointment" Caira said solemnly

"It's fine Caira. But on the bright side, you and your celebrity crush are in a very close relationship and....wait a minute, what do you mean when you said you and Mikel were in a very "intimate relationship"?, Has he ever made any attempts on you?" Kylee asked as she furrowed her brows in confusion

"Well, that is the problem. He does that almost all the time and I don't know why I can't afford to resist him!!" Caira said almost in a whisper.

"What the fuck caira!! you guys went too far, you're not even dating, why will you give your self cheaply to him." Kylee said in a harsh tone, Caira felt a sting in her heart when she heard Kylee said

that. Kylee was her best friend and she never expected her to say a such thing to her.

"You know, I think I'm done with this conversation, I'll be heading to the hospital now, have a nice day" Caira said calmly as she walked out of the room.

\*\*\*\*\*

That\_same\_day

Mikel stepped into his room slowly and met Caira sitting on the bed with a solemn look and a crossed arm, he felt guilty because it was about 6:45pm and he promised to take her to the ice cream store around 6:00pm that same day.

"Caira, look, I know you're mad at me but it wasn't intentional, the traffic was just to much, but we can still make it to the ice cream store before it closes by 7:00pm" Mikel said as he walked to meet Caira on the bed, but she wasn't responding.

"C'mon baby, I said I'm sorry" mikel said trying to reach for her lips but Caira turned her face away

"It's not about ice cream mikel, we have a problem" Caira said aloud

"What's it" Mikel asked with keen interest.

"I'm pregnant!!!" Caira muttered while Mikel's eyes glinted in shock.

Tbc....

Next episode loading

My Better Half

Highschool crush

By authoress Prudence

Episode 39

Few\_months\_later

Caira was on her way back home when she sighted a big car packed in front of her house, it appeared to her that they were having a wealthy visitor,

when she drew nearer to the house, she noticed that the car seemed familiar, she felt like she've seen it somewhere, but she couldn't recall where exactly. She could hear her mother's laughter, but she could hardly hear the voice of the visitor. she was so curious to know who it was, but she just had to hide her shameful self to avoid mockery. She went round the house and attempted entering through the back door, but it seemed to be locked, she brought out her phone and dialed her mother's number, and luckily enough, she picked up at the first beep.

"Mum, I'm at the the back door, please come open it" caira said almost in a whisper.

"Come through the front door caira, we're having a visitor, and his someone you'll like to see" her mum said in a glad tone as she hanged up immediately.

Caira stood for a while, reminiscing on what her

mother said. who could be in the sitting room, and who would want to see her?. At that moment, she wasn't expecting anyone and was not wishing to see anyone's face, she only wanted to be alone. As a result of her curiosity, she walked to the front door and pushed it slightly and the door went open. As Soon as she stepped in, she saw someone whom she never expected to see, it was Mikel. He was sitting on a couch at the right corner of the house. he was talking to her mom but his attention diverted to her as Soon as she stepped in. Caira's eyes locked with Mikel's eyes as they stared intensively at each other, Mikel stood up and attempted walking to caira, but he got hold of himself.

"Caira, is this how you welcome your visitor? He's been waiting for you for over 30 minutes now, he got so many interesting stuffs for you and me, isn't he so nice" caira's mom said happily, still not understanding what was going on in her

daughter's mind.

"Yeah, he sure is, right boss?" Caira said bitterly while Mikel looked away quickly.

"C'mon, go get him something to eat" caira's mum said rearranging the loads of gifts which Mikel brought for them.

"Thank you ma'am, I'm fine. I was about leaving anyways, I'll like her to see me out" Mikel said as he stood up.

"Sure dear. Caira, please see your boss out" caira's mom said with a smile

"They'll no need for that mum, my boss do know his way out of the house, if you don't mind, I have something important doing." caira uttered trying to control her tears from dropping.

"That's nonsense, see him off now, I'll be in the kitchen" caira's mum said and headed towards the kitchen.

kindly hi novelsrepublic on WhatsApp on plus two three four eight zero five five eight eight nine one right three to get added to the novels group

Silence stepped in as soon as caira's mom stepped out, they both stared at each other for a while without saying anything. But caira broke the silence.

"Why are you here and how did you find me" caira said.

"Caira, can we please talk outside?" Mikel asked while caira hesitated for a while and then decided to follow him outside. When they got outside, caira repeated her question again.

"How did you find me" caira asked

"Caira, I'm so sorry, I know I've caused you a lot of pain, but I need you to forgive me, I never believed that I'll ever fall deeply in love with you, ever since you left, things have never been the same, i need



you back caira, a moment without you is like spending my entire life time in darkness" Mikel said sincerely as he got hold of her hands

"Please go away, I don't want my mum to find us like this" caira said as she pulled out her hands from his grip.

"I'm sorry I pushed you away when you needed me, but I'm ready to take up my responsibilities, I'm willing to help you out through, please give me a chance" Mikel said in a low tone. In as much as she wanted to stay away from him, she just couldn't understand why his words seems to have effect on her. His presence alone, made her feel like hugging him and telling him how much she've missed their good moments together, she knew she've been crushing on him for a very long time, but what she felt for him was extraordinary, it was something more than love. it was something she've never felt in her entire life time, not even when she and Noah

were still together.

"Fine, I'll will be giving birth I few weeks time, I want you to be at the hospital, I'll give you a call whenever I'm in labour, will you be there?" caira asked hopefully.

"Yes, I promise. I would never let you down again" Mikel muttered as he pulled her into a warm hug. Her mum was right, Mikel was the person she needed to see to make her feel better. Though, he was the one who hurt her badly, but he was just the one she needed at that moment. They hugged for a very long time until caira decided to disengage.

"Would you need some money for anything?" Mikel asked concerned

"No. Although, your mum stopped paying me for a long time because I asked her to stop, because I don't think it's right for me to get paid for what I didn't work for. All I need is your presence, and of

course, some of your money, you don't expect me to pay for the hospital bills with your face, right??" caira muttered jokingly as she wrapped her hands around his shoulders.

"Right, If that'll make you take my number out of your blacklist" Mikel muttered while caira laughed out.

"Okay, I'm so sorry for blacklisting you. but as for Dianna, I'm sorry but she has to be on my blacklist for the time being" caira said.

"Well, Dianna has been on my neck, she really wants to see you" Mikel said

"Please don't bring her here" caira replied while Mikel nodded in affirmation.

After that day, Mikel visited caira more often, with gifts and baby stuffs, caira was glad because Mikel seemed to have genuinely changed, but she was more worried about her child, she has never been

pregnant before, she had no idea on child birth. she couldn't understand why she was constantly having the fear of loosing her life or her baby's life during delivery, despite her mother's words of encouragement. Anytime Mikel came visiting, caira kept reminding him about her delivery and his promises, until the day of delivery.

\*\*\*\*\*

It was a cold Saturday evening, caira sat on the kitchen table with an apple, while her mom made the dishes.

"I'm planning on moving out of Seoul" caira's mom announced as she chopped the onions carefully

"What!, Why?" Caira asked with a mouth full of apple

"We've lived in Seoul for a very long time, I got married to your father in Seoul, I gave birth to you in Seoul and your father was buried in Seoul,

things are not getting any better caira, I think it's time to relocate, what do you think?" caira's mom said with a sigh

"Well I'm not quite sure, I've spent most of my life in Seoul, all my friends are here, Even though they've suddenly turned into mockers, I still care about them and consider Seoul as my home. But if you're planning on moving out, you need a lot of money to do that" Caira replied with less interest.

"I've been saving some money right from the day you started working at the mansion, and I'm sure it's enough to get us another apartment outside the city. But it's fine if you don't want us to relocate" caira's mom said as she placed down the knife carefully and faced caira.

"By the way caira, I haven't seen Noah since you conceived" caira's mom said again.

"Well, I don't think there's any need to see him, because I don't want to see" caira said with an

eyeroll.

"Is he aware that you're carrying his baby?" Caira's mom asked.

"Yeah, I told him already" caira lied

"I need to see Noah, you're carrying his baby for crying out loud, he needs to come see me and do what he oughts to do a long time ago" caira's mom said.

"Mom! What do you mean by that, are you planning on getting me married to Noah" caira asked alarmed.

"No baby, I can never do such a thing, I only think it's right for him to check up on you and provide some money for your upkeep and the child, I wouldn't want my grandchild to grow up without a dad just like you did" her mother said in concern.

"Don't worry mom, my child won't....."

Caira was still talking to her mom when she

suddenly felt a strong contraction in her belly and then, a release of a hot liquor in between her legs.

"Ouch!!! I think the baby wants me to stop talking about his daddy" caira said with a chuckle as she placed her hands on her Tommy, rather, her mum took it more seriously.

" Are you okay?" Her mom asked concerned as she watched caira's smiling face curved into a painful expression.

"I'll be fine, I think I'm just stressed out" caira answered but the pain only got more intense. her mother helped her up and attempted walking her to her room, but caira screamed out in pain and fell on the floor with her legs apart.

"Mom, the baby is coming!!!" Caira yelled out in pain as she felt something trying to make it's way out of her.

TBC

My better half

Highschool crush

Authoress Prudence

Episode 40

Mikel walked into his room and turned the lights on, it was about 8:30 pm. He took off his clothes cautiously and was about stepping into the bathroom when he heard his phone ringing out, he checked the caller and discovered that it was Zack, he sighed tiredly as he picked the call.

"Hello, dude where the hell are you!" Zack asked over the phone

"I'm home" Mikel answered simply.

"How could you be home when it's prom night, ain't you coming over?" Zack asked

"I would, only if you find me a date" Mikel answered



"Don't tell me you don't have a date, what about Janelle" Zack asked playfully.

"I and Janelle has nothing together, caira is my date and there is no need coming for any dumb prom night if she isn't available" Mikel said partially angry.

"Chill dude!!! It was only a joke. Anyways, since you won't be coming, that means I still stand a chance of winning the prom night couples award" Zack said boostfully.

"Yeah, go for it" Mikel muttered with less interest as he hanged up.

He placed his phone on his drawer and walked into the bathroom. As soon as Mikel shut the bathroom door, Zoey stepped in with a short towel tied around her chest. It's been months since caira left the mansion, she sees no reason why Mikel still wouldn't touch her, not even for once has he spared her a side stare. But that night, she was

ready for anything, even if it was going to cost her her job, she was not leaving Mikel's room untouched. She walked towards his bed and sat comfortable waiting for him to finish from the bathroom. She was still seated on the bed when she heard Mikel's phone vibrating, she took the phone confidently and check who the caller was, Mikel saved the callers number as "BABY" with an heart emoji in front of the name, this got Zoey pissed as she hanged up immediately. The call came the second time, but she hanged up again. And just when she was about dropping the phone, a message pop in from the same caller. Her lips dropped in shock as she read the message.

" Hi, it's caira, why aren't you taking my calls, I'm at Seoul national hospital, I'm in labor" Zoey read out in a whisper. Zoey got even more angrier when she discovered that it was caira, she was such a fool to ever believe that Mikel and caira would separate for good. She felt like storming into the

hospital and tearing her face and the bastard baby's face apart. She was still fuming in anger when she received a text again, she picked up the phone and read the text out again.

"Please come right now, I need to pay for my bills" Zoey read out in a very low voice.

The last SMS got Zoey more upset, as she replied to the SMS and quickly deleted all the text messages and the missed call, she went further by blacklisting caira's number and deleting it. After she was sure that Mikel wouldn't find any evidence of caira's missed calls or texts, she placed the phone on the table and and walked out of the room in contentment.

\*\*\*\*\*

Caira struggled to sit up with the help of the nurse, the first thing that came to her mind was her child, good thing she was alive, but where could her child be.

"Ma'am, where is my baby?" Caira asked in a shaky tone

"She is doing well, you gave birth to a beautiful baby girl, you need some rest, so we took her to a different ward" the nurse said with a smile while caira heaved a sigh of relief

"Uhhh...did anyone come looking for me?" Caira asked hopefully.

"No, you need to eat something now and have some rest" the nurse replied with a smile. The nurse was still with caira when an older nurse walked into caira's ward holding a tray.

"How is she doing now" the older nurse asked.

"She's fine ma'am, but it seems like she is in urgent need of blood" the younger nurse answered

"Thank you Nancy, I think I'll take over from here" the older nurse replied

"Yes, have a nice day madam" the younger nurse

replied.

The younger nurse left the ward immediately, leaving caira to her colleague. The nurse walked to caira and examined her thoroughly until she got a result.

"Young lady, you've lost a lot of blood during the delivery, you are in urgent need of blood transfusion" the old nurse muttered after examining caira.

"Okay, can we do that now" caira answered trying as much of possible to be strong.

"Yes, we can commence with the blood transfusion right now, only if you provide the money for it first" the nurse said with an eyeroll.

"How much will that cost me?" Caira asked weakly

"Just \$800" the nurse announced packing up her things.

"Okay, I need to see my mom" caira replied

hopefully as she struggled out of the bed.

"Your mom is aware that you need a blood transfusion. You can't leave your ward, you just gave birth and you need enough rest and privacy" the nurse answered with less concern.

"Okay, can you please let my mom see me?" Caira asked

"I said you need some privacy, your mom can't see you now. You can tell me whatever you want to tell her, and I'll help you deliver your message to her" the nurse answered rather too rudely.

"No, it's something private, I need to see my mom in person" caira said as she stubbornly left her ward, but the old nurse ignored her and showed no concern about her leaving her ward.

Caira was able to move her weak body all the way to the waiting room, her mother sighted her coming, so she quickly ran to her and helped her

sit.

"Honey, I'm so sorry you have to come over here, but they wouldn't let me in. The doctor said you need a blood transfusion, but it'll cost me \$800, and I don't have such money" Caira's Mom complained bitterly.

"I'll be fine mum, did you get any reply from him? Is he coming?" Caira asked weakly.

"No dear, I called him twice but he hanged up, I tried messaging him, but he isn't replying to any of his SMS, I think he must be really busy. By the way, who exactly is that? Is it Noah?" Caira's mom asked.

"Uhhh...not exactly, his just a friend who promised to take care of the bills" caira lied.

"Ok honey, but I don't think this friend of yours is ever coming, I should be on my way now, I need to borrow some money from Kylee's mom." caira's mom said and was about leaving when caira

stopped her.

"Wait mom, they'll be no need for that, my friend will be here soon and he'll settle the bills, I trust him, he never goes back on his words" caira said still hoping on Mikel

"No dear, I'm not quite sure about this, you look so pale, you need some rest. I'll go look for more money for your bills and on my way back, I'll get you some fruits" caira's mom said while caira nodded in affirmation .

"By the way, I've seen my granddaughter, she's just as adorable as her mom" caira's mom muttered happily while Caira's face heat up.

Immediately her mom left, caira picked up her phone again to call Mikel, and just when she unlocked her phone, Mikel's message appeared on her screen, it was a new text, her mother seemed not to have opened or read it yet. She clicked on the message anxiously and read through it in



silence.

"Caira, I won't be coming over, take care of yourself and your bastard child. Have a great day. Yours sincerely, Mikel" caira's lips dropped in shock as she read the text message over and over again, not believing what she was seeing.

"No, I don't believe this. This must be a prank, I need to call him" caira muttered in tears as she picked up her phone again and attempted calling him, but his number wasn't reachable. After so many attempts, she finally gave up.

"Mikel can't do this to me, right?" Caira asked her self as more tears came rolling down her cheeks. She still find it Impossible to believe that Mikel will ever abandon her. she sat at the waiting room patiently as she waited for Mikel's arrival hopefully.

After an hour of waiting, she began feeling dizzy and tired, she felt the earth revolving around her and life gradually leaving her as her heart raced

very fast. She was still seated on the chair when a nurse walked up to her.

"Young lady, you're running out of time, you need an urgent blood transfusion, or else you might not survive this" the nurse said concerned, but caira simply ignored her.

"If it's about the bills, you don't need to worry about it, your life matters alot. We can get started with the blood transfusion now and you can settle the bills when you're back on your feet" the nurse said as she held caira's arm gently and attempted helping her up, but caira protested.

"Let go of me, I don't need your sympathy. Mikel will be here any moments from now and he'll pay up all the bills" caira said in frustration as more tears came rolling down her cheeks.

"If you say so, please take care of yourself" the nurse said with a shrug. The nurse was about walking away when caira collapsed on the floor.

All the nurses gathered around her and rushed her to the emergency ward, there they used a defibrillator to try reviving her back, while she struggled between life and death. The nurses did all they could but she wasn't getting any better. Caira's mom was seen running into the hospital with a grocery bag filled with fruits, she attempted making her way into caira's ward but the nurses was quick enough to stop her.

Caira was gradually loosing breath, she laid down helplessly as a stream line of tears rolled down her cheek. At that moment, she cared less about her life, instead, she felt deep hatred for Mikel. And at the last moment she muttered something quietly to her self

"Mikel, I hate you. In my next life, we'll be enemies forever" caira muttered to herself as she shut her eyes in tears. The nurses noticed that she was no longer breathing, so they stopped immediately.

"What's the problem, why did you stop?" The older nurse said walking into Caira's ward.

"I'm sorry ma'am, I think we lost her" one of the nurses replied disappointedly.

My better half

Highschool crush

By authoress Prudence

Episode 41

Mikel woke up the next morning, it was a Sunday morning, he picked up his phone and searched for caira's number, that was what he does every morning, he never steps out if the house without hearing her voice first. He scrolled through his phone in search of caira's number, but couldn't find it, good thing he wrote down her phone number in his diary, so he opened his drawer and brought out his diary. he flipped through the pages carefully and found caira's information on the 4th

page, he copied it into his phone and dialed it, but it wasn't reachable. he did this repeatedly but it still wasn't reachable. What could have happened? Why was her number not reachable, could she have blacklisted him again, caira wouldn't blacklist him for no reason, he needed to pay her a visit, to ensure that she's fine. Mikel had his bath quickly and in no time, he was done dressing up, he picked up his car keys and hit the road.

After a long drive, he finally arrived at caira's apartment. He stepped out of the car in silence as he scoured his eyes around the environment. The serenity of the environment was just so unusual, he stood outside for few minutes, but couldn't find any trace of her. So, he decided to ring the doorbell. He Walk towards the door and rang the doorbell repeatedly, but there was no response, it appeared that no one was home. This got him really worried as he paced in front of her apartment restlessly. Where could she have gone

so early, it was just 7:25am, and caira was always at home. Mikel inserted his phone into his pocket as he walked to the apartment nextdoor and rang the doorbell. Luckily,he heard a response from inside the house, he waited patiently and the door opened almost immediately, reviling the face of an elderly woman in her late 60's.

"Good morning ma'am" Mikel greeted

"Good morning my son, please come in" the woman said ushering Mikel into her house but he protested

"Thank you, but I'm fine outside" Mikel answered almost rudely.

"Okay, how can I help you?" The elderly woman asked

"I came looking for your neighbor, but it seems they're not home, do you have any idea on where they're?" Mikel asked, he felt like the question

sounded stupid because the woman obviously wasn't sharing a flat with caira, she was just a neighbor nextdoor, but he was confused and just needed to hear something positive.

"Young Man, there are so many flats here, I've got so many neighbors around me, please which exactly?" The woman asked nicely.

"Caira Hudson's flat, her mom's name is.....

"Mrs Elena?" The woman answered quickly.

"Yes, so where are they?" Mikel asked hopefully

"Oh dear, are you looking for caira?" The woman asked again.

"Yes" Mikel answered impatiently but the woman sighed sadly and bowed her head, this got Mikel really curious as he felt like yelling at the old lady and making her to say out whatever was in her mind.

"What about her ma'am" Mikel answered trying to

control his temper.

"I'm sorry young man, but rumor has it that she died last night" the woman announced.

Immediately the woman said that, Mikel felt his heart stopped beating, but he needed to be sure of what the woman was saying.

"Sorry, which caira are you talking about?. I think you're making a mistake, the caira I'm talking about is pregnant, and that's her apartment over there" Mikel stammered as he pointed his finger towards caira's apartment.

"Of course my dear, we only have one caira in this place and you're correct, that's her apartment over there. But she's dead now, some people said she died last night, while giving birth to her child" the woman said pathetically While Mikel staggered back as he felt his heart drop.

"you can ask the nurses at Seoul national hospital, who took her delivery. you know, when she was in



labor last night, I helped her mom drive her to the.....

The woman was still talking when mikel left her in an hyper speed, he dashed into his car and headed to Seoul national hospital. As soon as he arrived at the hospital, he highlighted out of his car, leaving the door open. He headed for the reception office. when he got to the reception office, he met two ladies discussing and laughing out loud, but the ladies attention diverted to him when he stormed in, as soon as they sighted him walking in, they let out a scream of joy as they giggled happily, but Mikel interrupted them rudely.

"I'm looking for a lady called caira Hudson, she was here last night, where is her ward" Mikel asked upon getting to their table.

"OMG!!! Are you Mikel Camford" one of the lady asked in joy.

"Where the hell is she" Mikel yelled out as he

stamped his hands against the desk, bringing fear to the minds of the nurses.

"I'm sorry sir, if you are here to make enquiry about any delivery, please go to the director's office, it's at the 3rd floor, we are only receptionist" one of the girl answered in fear as she ushered him out.

Mikel walked out of the reception and headed straight for the director's office at the 3rd floor. when he got there, he stormed into the room without knocking. The woman who was in the office, looked up in shock as she heard her door go open abruptly.

"Young Man, you don't just walk into people's office without permission, you should.....

"Ma'am, I'm here to see caira Hudson, she gave birth in this hospital last night" Mikel said impatiently.

"Calm down young man, the caira you're talking about died yesterday night around 11:00pm" the woman said unconcerned.

"No, I'm not sure you know the person I'm talking about" Mikel said in confusion.

"I took her delivery yesterday night, she ran out of blood, so she died" the woman said with no remorse.

"I don't believe you, I need to see her body and the baby" Mikel said in anger.

"Her mum took her corpse and the child away. And please keep your voice low, this is a hospital, and no one is responsible for her death, the only person who should be blamed here is her friend who was supposed to pay for her blood transfusion but never turned up" the nurse uttered rudely

\*\*\*\*\*

Few\_weeks\_later

Mikel was seated at a bar as he over turned a bottle of alcohol into his mouth. It's been 3 weeks since caira died but it still felt like an hour ago. Ever since she died, Mikel has been drinking heavily and blaming himself for her death. He still couldn't understand why she never called him when she was in labor.

"Dude, you ought to stop hurting your self, be a man and get over her" Zack said as he snatched the bottle of liquor away from Mikel's hand, he was already fed up with Mikel's attitude lately, Mikel has so many girls out there, who are dying to date him, he sees no reason why he would want to kill himself over one girl.

Mikel was still seated in his drowsy state, when he saw someone who looked just like caira, His eyes glinted in surprise as he staggered to her and got hold of hands, while Zack followed behind him

immediately.

"Caira, I knew you were not dead, I knew you were still alive" Mikel mumbled upon getting to her, he got hold of her hands but Zack was quick enough to interfere.

"Sorry ma'am, he's just drunk" Zack muttered as he pulled Mikel away from the elderly woman he mistaked for caira.

The\_next\_morning

Mikel struggled to sit up as he felt an unusual heaviness in his head, he turned to the other side of the bed and found Zoey sleeping on the bed with a duvet covering her, Mikel felt like pushing her off the bed and soon as he found her lying comfortable on his bed.

"Zoey, get up now!!" Mikel said as he tapped on her back hardly, while Zoey managed to sit up

"Good morning baby, what's up" Zoey asked with

a yawn and stretch.

"What are you doing on my bed?" Mikel asked in surprise.

"What do you mean by that? You were drunk last night and I walked you to your bed, but I couldn't leave you alone, so I decided stay with you, did I do anything wrong?" Zoey asked.

" That isn't part of your job as a secretary, leave my room now and get back to work" Mikel muttered coldly as he left the bed.

"Seriously, is that a thank you? Zoey asked as she stepped out of the bed and put on her clothes, but Mikel ignored her. She was about leaving his room when he called her back.

"Where are all the frames and posters in my room?" Mikel asked as he scoured his eyes round the room, but couldn't find any frame nor wall posters.

"You mean those ugly pictures of that maid called Caira?" Zoey asked with less concern

"Yes, where are they" Mikel asked anxiously.

"I got rid of them Mikel, I burnt all the frames and posters with her face on it, don't you think it's making your room messy?" Zoey said with a shrug, while Mikel's lips dropped in shock

TBC

My better half

Highschool crush

Authoress Prudence

Episode 42

"I got rid of it Mikel, I burnt all the frames and posters with her face on it, don't you think it's making your room messy?" Zoey asked with a shrug, while Mikel's lips dropped in shock

"What did you just say?" Mikel asked in shock, after

a long silence

"I said, I destroyed all the frames" Zoey repeated with an eyeroll. But Mikel attacked her as he placed his both hands on her neck and pressed her down, while Zoey choked uncontrollably. Zoey could see the angry look in his eyes, she has never seen him react so rashly about anything, she moved her hands to his hands and tried pulling his hands away, but his grip around her neck was just too tight. Zoey was gradually loosing breath, she never expected it would result to that, she thought she was actually going to die. fortunately, he let go of her while she gasped for breathe.

"You're fired!!" Mikel muttered coldly as he walked away, leaving zoey on the floor.

\*\*\*\*\*

6\_years\_Later.

Mikel snuffed in a large quantity of cocaine into his



nostril, he did that continuously until the cocaine powder was completely finished. He pulled out his drawer in search of more cocaine, but there was none. He quickly picked up his phone and dialed his suppliers phone number.

"Lucas, get me more drugs before tomorrow morning" Mikel said in his masculine voice.

"Yes boss" Lucas answered over the phone. As soon as Mikel hanged up, he picked up a stick of cigarettes and lighted it up. Drugs has been his aid ever since caira died, he couldn't imagine how he would have been able to survive the trauma of living his life without caira by his side, and knowing fully well that he contributed to her death. Caira's death has really changed him alot, he was no longer the Mikel he used to be, he was now hardened and wild. Drugs and sex was the only thing that has been sustaining him. of course, he missed caira a lot, but he still had to satisfy his

sexual desires, even though it hurts to do that with anyone other than caira. He recently moved to New York City, to help his father run one of his company. Although, he was not interested in managing any of his father's company, he still had to do it because he doesn't dare to go against his father's will. His father's company was definitely not his problem, because he never bothered stepping his foot into the company ever since he arrived New York. His father could go to hell for all he cares, and rant about his irresponsibility and nonchalant attitude towards the family's business, but that wasn't stopping Mikel from performing his normal evening ritual of drinking at the bar every Saturday evening. It was a Saturday evening and was almost 8:00pm. Normally, he was supposed to be at the bar, but since he moved to New York, he has been unable to find a perfect bar that would suit him. He was still smoking when he heard his phone ring out loud. He checked the caller and

was lightened up when he discovered that it was Zack.

"Hello, I just found the best bar for us, trust me, they've got the best and most expensive wine and also hot strippers, come check it out" Zack said sounding really happy.

"Where are you?" Mikel asked puffing out more cigarette

"I'm at "Savage nitez", it's just opposite the bus station" Zack said

"I'll be there in an hour time" Mikel muttered as he ended the call. As Soon as Mikel ended the call, he had his bath and drove out of his new apartment.

In less than an hour, he arrived at the venue and walked into the bar, the sight was indeed breathtaking. he scoured his eyes round the hall in search of Zack, but couldn't find him anyway around, so he picked up his phone and gave Zack a

call, and Zack took the call after several missed calls .

"Zack, where the hell are you" Mikel asked as he took his sit at a random table.

"I'll be down soon, I got my self a bitch" Zack muttered as he hanged up quickly.

Mikel ordered for a drink and sat alone and watched the female strippers moved their body rhythmically. Soon, the bartender delivered the bottle of alcoholic wine on his table, so Mikel began drinking and enjoyed the performance of the strippers on the stage. While watching, he noticed a particular stripper who's body was just too perfect to be true, this really caught his attention as he moved further and sat at the front roll to get a clearer view of her. He watched her with keen interest as she moved her flexible body round the long iron rod while hungry men surrounded her like lion waiting to devour an

antelope. mikel watched on till they were done stripping. As soon as the strippers finished their performance, they assembled in a straight line and walked out of the stage in numbers, While Mikel kept his eyes on the particular strippers with a red under things and masks. She seemed quite familiar, he was still trying to recall where he met her, when he heard someone walked behind him, he looked back and saw Zack.

"What do you think about this place dude?, Isn't it cool?" Zack asked upon taking his sit close to Mikel, but Mikel's attention was entirely on the stripper.

"Don't you think that stripper looks just like Caira?" Mikel asked as he stared at the stripper intensively.

"Mikel, stop imaging things, you're drunk, caira is dead and gone, I think we need to get going now" Zack said with a shrug

"No Zack, I'm not drunk, I really think that stripper

looks like Caira, I need to see the manager of this bar" Mikel said as he left his table and headed towards the managers office while Zack followed behind him to ensure that he doesn't do anything Stupid. As soon as Mikel arrived at the manager's office, he went in and sat on the couch facing the managers chair.

"How can I help you young man?" The short chubby man asked as he placed down his glass of wine.

"Who's in charge of this bar" Mikel muttered

"I am,...any problem?" The man asked

"I need a bitch who will serve me tonight, and I need the best. how much do they charge for a night" Mikel asked.

"Just \$1000 sir, I'll send for one of our best sex worker to serve you tonight" the manager said.

"I want to see all your sex workers first" Mikel said

"Alex, get all the sex workers to my office right away, this young man will like to make his choice" the manager said with a crooked smile.

In less than 5 minutes, some group of partly naked girls were seen walking into the manager's office, they were all putting on a bright smile as they walked in. Mikel moved his eyes through the faces of the young ladies standing in front of him, but he couldn't find any trace of the lady who shared a striking resemblance with caira.

"So, which one of them are you paying for" the manager asked as he relaxed his self on his office chair.

"Are this all your sex workers" Mikel asked as he looked at each of the girls over and over again.

"Yes, this are all, don't you like any of them?" The manager asked

"There was a particular stripper on the stage

today.....

"Oh, sorry sir, in this bar, sex workers are different from strippers. Not all the strippers accept to work as a sex workers. But if you can perhaps, double the payment, I can get you any of the stripper you want" the manager said

"Send for all the strippers now and get this bitches out of here" Mikel said while the man walked all the sex workers out of the office and brought in a group of strippers.

"Here are the strippers. which one of them caught your attention today?" the manager asked

"Take of your mask" Mikel said while the girls took of their mask obediently. Mikel scoured his eyes on the faces of the strippers but couldn't find the particular lady he was looking for.

"There was a stripper with red under things at the stage, where is she" Mikel asked, still not satisfied.



"Uhhh...that must be Ellis" one of the strippers said, trying to get Mikel's attention. But this only got Mikel more confused.

"Is there any stripper or sex worker in your bar, by the name \*Caira\*?" Mikel asked the manager

"Not at all young man. But if you want Ellis, you could book a lodge up stairs and I will send her to your lodge when she comes tomorrow. You know, you are not the only man who is asking for Ellis, but she is not a sex worker and she has never accepted to serve any man, but I could help you if you're ready to double the price" the manager said with a grin

"I'll give you \$10,000. I'll like to meet her tomorrow" Mikel said as he stood up and left the manager's office while Zack followed behind him like a puppet.

That evening, Mikel couldn't stop thinking, he was so anxious to know who that stripper was.

although, her face was covered, but he still felt like she had this striking resemblance with caira. He has made a promise to himself to find caira, if at all she's not dead.

\*\*\*\*\*

She walked into the house with her stripping clothes neatly arranged in a blue polythene bag, it was already 10:00pm, so she tip-toed into the house to avoid waking anyone up. She tip-toed into the room at the left and found her mom and baby girl deep asleep. She heaved a sigh of relief as she attempted walking back to her room, but her phone rang out loud, disturbing everyone's sleep.

"Damn it!!" She muttered almost in a whisper as she picked up the call quickly

"Hello Ellis, are you home" her boss asked over the phone.

"Yes sir, is there anything you want me to do for

you" she asked as she ran to her room

"Why are you always in a rush to go back home, a man came asking of you, and he offered \$5,000 for just a night, isn't that great" her boss said, sounding really happy.

"Well, once again sir, I have a baby to take care of and I'm a stripper, not a sex worker. you can get the client a sex worker and not me" she muttered quietly, trying to keep her voice low. Although, everyone was already awake

"Ellis, this client is so rich, he could give you anything you ask of, all he's asking is a night with you." Her boss pressed further, but she shrieked in fear when she saw her daughter standing by her the door.

"Good bye sir, I'll see you tomorrow" she answered and hanged up quickly.

"Hey baby, why aren't you sleeping" she asked her

baby with a smile

"Mummy, are you just closing from work" her daughter asked in her tiny voice as she walked to her mother and rested her self on her thighs.

"Uhhh....no sweetie, mummy has been in her room" she said stroking her daughter's hair gently.

"Really? But I've been up for a very long time, but I couldn't find you in your room" her daughter said again, she was about responding to her daughter when she sighted her mom walking into her room.

"Yes dear, Amanda has been up since 8:00pm, she has refused to go to bed without you" her mother said walking into her room.

"I'm sorry Mama, I'm sorry for making y'all worried about me, but life gave me no choice, if I don't do this, there is no way I'll be able to fend for you guys" she said solemnly

"I understand baby, but this job is rather too risky

and rough for you dear, I think a more decent job will do" her mom said as she sat on the bed.

"Mom, there are no jobs for people like me in New York, the only available jobs are in public cafeteria and manicure shops, and that wouldn't fetch me enough money like stripping does" she uttered in a whisper.

"I understand, but I think we shouldn't be saying this with Amanda close by. You know, she's really smart" her mom said with a chuckle.

"Okay, I'm sorry for waking you up, please go to bed" she said as she held her baby up and placed her on the bed.

\*\*\*\*\*

The\_Next\_Day.

She held the iron bar, while the long rope lifted her up her feet. the men throwing bundles on dollar notes made her to put in her best effort, she held

the long stripping rod carefully and let her body roll down it freely. She was barely halfway down the rod when she sighted someone among the audience who caught her attention. she felt her heart ache again, and due to how distracted she had become, she landed abruptly on the floor while everyone gasped out. She stood up almost immediately to have a clearer picture of the person, but he appeared real to her.

"No, that can't be him" she muttered to her self as she left the stage quickly. As soon as she left the stage, she walked into the washroom and shut the door, before washing her face. After that, she wiped her face with the clean towel, her makeup was already ruined.

"I'm fine, he wasn't there, I was only hallucinating" she consoled her self as she starred at her face through the mirror. After some minutes in the washroom, she finally decided to see her boss in

the office and know why he wanted to see her.

As soon as she got to his office, she knocked on the door gently and his hoarse voice was heard ushering her in. She stepped into his office and sat facing him

"Sir you wanted to see me" she asked in her usual calm voice

"Yes. it's about what we discussed last night" he said

"What about it? I said I I'm not doing it, sorry" she added sarcastically.

"Well, if you can't, I don't think there's any need for your service here, since you can't fetch me the money I want" her boss said

"Sir, what do you mean by that?" She stammered

"You know exactly what I mean Ellis, you're fired" her boss announced

"Sir, you can't fire me, that's not fair" she muttered as she stood up quickly

"Life isn't fair. if life was fair, I wouldn't be paying an employee who does absolutely nothing other than stripping on stage" her boss said

"Sir, that was the agreement I signed. when I applied for this job, I applied as a stripper and not a sex worker, why are you doing this" she said dejected

"Well, things has changed now, you need to do the both. C'mon Ellis, he only wants your company, he isn't asking for sex" her boss said with a shrug

"Fine, I'll see him. But if he attempts forcing himself on me, I'll harm him and walk away" caira said after much consideration.

"Just make sure you don't do anything Stupid that would cost me my bar. Take this, here is his room number" her boss said as he handed over a card to



her while she collected it and nodded.

She turned around and was about leaving his office when her boss called her back

"Be kind and submissive, don't pick up an argument with him even though he annoys you. He's rich enough to sue this bar" her manager said again, while she nodded and left.

Immediately she left his office, she had a final look at the card, his room number was room "306", that was in the 4th floor, she attempted using the elevator, but it was damaged.

"Eish!!! The stupid manager is just too stingy to fix the elevator" she mumbled as she made use of the stair case. It took her a lot of efforts to climb all the way to the 4th floor, but she finally arrived there. As she advanced towards the door, she rang the doorbell and a masculine voice was heard ushering her in. She opened the door carefully and stepped in, as Soon as she stepped in, she shut the

door. the room was dark, so she could barely see the face of the man who ushered her in.

"Hello sir, I'm Ellis, my boss said you'll like to have a word with me" she said as she moved her right hand to her hair and pulled out her hair pin silently. She wasn't quite sure of what her boss told her, she don't believe that any man would call her to his room just for a mere discussion, so she was prepared to fight, just in case he tries to force himself on her, she would stab him with her hair pin and run away. The worst thing her boss was going to do is to fire her, he would bear the consequences alone if the man sue his bar.

"Have your seat" the masculine voice said while she hesitated for a While, before seating on the bed and clutching unto her hairpin in fear.

As she sat on the bed, she felt the man walked past her and switched on the room light. As soon as the man turn around to look at her, she felt her eyes

playing tricks on her again. the man's eyes equally glinted in surprise as he called her by her real name.

"Caira?" Mikel muttered in shock as he stared at her in astonishment

TBC

My Better Half 43

Highschool Crush

Authoress Prudence.

Episode 43

"Caira?" Mikel muttered as he stared at her in astonishment. She also couldn't believe it as she walked to him in shock and placed her right hand on his chest, to confirm if he was real. And yes!, he felt so real to be a mere hallucination. He got hold of her hands as he watched her in shock, but she moved away from him quickly.

"Mikel" she muttered, still finding it hard to believe that he was real, but in he Swift move, he advanced towards her and pulled her into a tight hug while she struggled out of his arms.

"Caira, is this really you? You're alive!" Mikel said happily as he watched caira who was no longer the young teenage girl he knew six years ago, she was now a full grown beautiful and hot lady. Caira stood in silence for a long time before turning around. She attempted running out of the room, but Mikel was quick enough to hold her.

"Caira, it's me Mikel!!" Mikel said almost in a whisper as he held her arm.

"What are you doing in New York" she muttered as she tried pulling her hand out of Mikel's grip but to no avail..

"Caira, why did you leave all of a sudden and why did you fake your death" Mikel asked as he held her close to his body.

"Wow. now that you know I'm alive, so what's your plan?" Caira asked with a scuff, tears brewing up in her eyes.

"I'll take you with me and never let you out of my sight again" Mikel said as he as he stared directly into her teary eyes.

"No, that's not happening, you dumped me all alone in the hospital and left me to die and you still think I'll be stupid enough to trust you again?" Caira asked as she moved away from him, but Mikel furrowed his brows in confusion.

"What do you mean" he asked in confusion

"Don't act like you don't know what you did, you.....

"Caira, I thought we settled that a long time ago, I know I messed up caira, you were pregnant for me and I tried denying my responsibility, but I apologized and you forgave me, you promised to

give me a call once you're in labor, but you gave birth to my child and left with no trace. you left me shattered for years and your absence caused me depression to the extent that I had to survive on hard drugs . Do you know how hard life was without you, I felt stupid and blamed my self when the doctor told me that you were dead, I felt it was all my fault for getting you pregnant without Knowing the consequences. Why did you leave without notice" Mikel stated in frustration.

"I hate you Mikel, you're just too proud to admit to your mistake, my greatest regret in life is ever getting to know you" caira said as she as tears fall freely down her chin.

"What about my child?" Mikel asked

"Do you mean by \*MY\* child?. I'm not sharing my baby with a man who wasn't there for her, she's my child and you have no position in her life" caira said and attempted leaving his room but Mikel

pulled her back, while caira pulled out her hair pin and pointed it towards Mikel's chest.

"Stay away from me, or else I'll hurt you" caira said holding out her hair pin in shaky hands, but Mikel seemed not to care as he advanced towards her not minding if she would stab him.

"I'm not joking Mikel, I'll stab you if you come any closer" caira said still holding out her hair pin, but Mikel turned deaf ears to all her threats.

"I've searched for you for so long caira, and now that I've found you, I'll be stupid to let you go again" Mikel muttered as he advanced towards her but she quickly retreated back and moved her hair pin to her neck.

"Stay away from me, or else I'll hurt my self" caira threatened as she placed the pin on her neck, while Mikel stopped immediately. And without further hesitation, caira opened the door and ran out.

As soon as she left the room, Mikel paced restlessly around the room, he was glad that caira was alive, but he still felt bad because she was still mad at him. He still couldn't understand why caira was mad at him, they were doing just fine before her delivery, but she gave birth to his child and ran away without any reason. He was surely going to find her and his child, the manager would definitely know something about her whereabouts, they do have a lot of things to talk about.

### The\_Next\_Morning

Mikel woke up as early as 7:00am and had his bath, he put on a nice outfit, picked of his car key and headed towards the bar in which he met caira, he needed to ask if anyone knows where she lived, he was really curious and wanted to see his child.

Kindly Hi NovelsRepublic on +2348055889183 on WhatsApp to get added to our novels group and get PDF links



As soon as he arrived at the bar, he stepped out and headed towards the managers office. The manager smiled broadly, exposing his bad dentition as soon as he saw Mikel walked in.

"Good morning sir, what brings you to my office this early" the manager said with a worried look.

"Where is she" Mikel asked as he sat down comfortably, resting his back on the soft visitors chair.

"I'm sorry sir, but she resigned yesterday night" the manager announced, adding to Mikel's frustration.

"Why" Mikel asked as he rested up and await a reply

"I don't know sir, not long had I sent her to your room when she came into my office looking quite angry and requested for her final payment. She informed me that she would like to resign because

she isn't serving you. I'm so sorry for any inconveniences caused by her, but I'm more sorry because there is no refund" the manager explained

"I'm not here for any refunds, I'm here to inquire about her place of residence" Mikel stated, but the manager hesitated for a while before answering, which made his response seem quite suspicious.

"I honestly don't know where she lives" the manager lied, but his facial expression failed him as Mikel was able to detect that he was lying.

"If you can tell me where she lives, there would be no reason for me to ask for a refund. It's fine if you really don't know where she lives, but I would like to have my money back since she didn't serve me last night" Mikel threatened, bringing fear to the mind of the manager who was scared of losing his money.

"She asked me not to disclose her location to anyone, but since you insist, then my assistant will

take you to her apartment at Syracuse." The manager muttered begrudgingly

\*\*\*\*\*

Caira sat on a wooden stool outside her compound with her daughter playing happily around the compound, she was washing a pile of clothes when she saw a car drove into the compound. out of fear, caira reached out for her daughter quickly.

"Amanda!! Mandy!!, Go inside now" caira said as she stood up and watched the car anxiously, while her daughter ran into the house obediently.

Caira watched anxiously as the car packed in front of her apartment and Mikel was seen stepping out of the car. a gasp escaped her lips as soon as her eyes met with Mikel's. How did he find her, the only person who knew where she lives was her boss, could he have given him her address?. Caira watched with her lips slightly open as Mikel walked to her, after so many years apart, she still find it

hard to believe that Mikel's appearance and looks still attracted her.

"Are you stalking me?" caira asked as her face crumbled up in a frown.

"Caira please let me explain" Mikel said

"I don't wanna hear any of it, please leave before my mum comes back and find you here" caira said as she took one of the clothes she was washing and threw it on Mikel's body.

"I'll go caira, but not without seeing my child. I don't think it'll be fair if you don't let me see my child" mikel requested trying to make his way into the house but caira was quick enough to stop him.

"You don't have any child here Mikel, there's no body inside the house other than me, and you also don't have the right to come into my house without my permission!!!"caira said as she stood in Mikel's way.

"Please caira, I don't want any trouble, A little child ran into the house as soon as I drove in" Mikel stated.

"I'm not the only woman in this compound, how are you sure the child is mine?. Infact, you don't have any right to search my house because of a child you neglected." Caira said still standing at the entrance, but what Mikel next was unbelievable, He lifted caira up on his shoulder and carried her into the house while caira kept wiggling her legs helplessly in attempt to escape. As soon as Mikel got into the room, he placed her on the bed, and got on top of her.

"Where is my child?" Mikel asked as he pinned her both hands on the bed, to prevent her from hitting him.

"Mikel get off me, I don't know what you're talking about" caira lied while her daughter hid her self at the bathroom and watched a stranger bullying her

mom.

Mikel moved his hands to the light singlet she was wearing and attempted tearing it off but caira held his arms quickly, But mikel moved his face to her neck and kissed her forcefully while caira struggled. Caira struggled and screamed out loud in attempts to get the neighbors attention, but it was all to no avail. As soon as Mikel raised her short skirt up, caira shivered as she didn't like where it was heading to. His actions showed clearly that he was under an influence of hard drugs, he wasn't in his right senses.

"Mikel, please stop this madness now, you don't have to do this again" caira screamed out helplessly as Mikel started unbuckling his trouser, but mikel was only trying to get the attention of her child. He was still unbuckling his trouser when he heard a tiny voice spoke behind him.

"Leave my mommy alone!!" The little girl said in

her tiny voice while Mikel turned around quickly and saw the little girl standing in front of her.

Mikel was marveled when he saw the child as he left caira immediately and got hold of the adorable little girl who retreated back in fear.

"What's your name cutie" Mikel asked as held her little hands gently.

"I won't tell you, my Mommy told me not to talk to strangers" she said while Mikel smiled at the girls baby lips which was just as cute as her mom's lips.

"Who's your Mommy" Mikel asked

"That's her over there" the girl said as she pointed her finger at caira who was changing into a more decent outfit with a frown.

"So, where's your daddy" Mikel asked in a low tone

"I don't have a Daddy, my dad died before I was born" the little girl answered with a shrug.

"Oh, is that what your mommy told you" Mikel said as he glanced at caira.

"Yes sir" the girl responded

"Your mommy was lying, I'm your daddy" Mikel said while caira flamed up in anger.

"Stop talking nonsense Mikel. Amanda, don't believe him, your daddy is dead" caira interfered as she stood up from the bed

"Amanda?, that's such a beautiful name for an adorable girl like you" Mikel said to the little girl in a very calm voice as he pretended not to hear caira.

"Thank you mister, are you my new daddy. You know, I wished my daddy never died, but I'll also like to have a new daddy" the little girl said ignorantly.

"Mandy, that's enough, remember what I told you about strangers?" Caira asked while her daughter nodded and ran to her.



"Caira, please let me talk to my daughter" Mikel said as he advanced towards her.

"Mom, is this man really my father?" The little girl asked in confusion.

"No, he's not, he's just a lunatic" caira said as she held Mikel's hand and led him out of the house while Amanda trailed behind them slowly. As soon as they got outside the house, caira let go of him.

" Mikel, get into your car and leave now!!" caira said almost in a whisper.

"I'm not leaving without my daughter" Mikel said while caira flamed up in anger.

"What daughter exactly? Mandy is not your daughter, you stopped being a father to her when you left us to die at the hospital" caira said in anger

"Caira, I honestly don't know what you're talking about because you never called me when you were

in labor. I see no reason why you're mad at me, how should I know you were in labor" Mikel asked "Oh, now you're denying not to see my calls, but are you also denying your stupid text messages" caira yelled out unconsciously, making Mikel more confused.

" What text message" Mikel asked sincerely. Caira was about giving him an answer, when a car drove in and parked in front of caira's apartment. They both stood in silence as they watched the car parked beside Mikel's car and a man opened the door slowly and stepped out. Caira watched the handsome young man for a while. He seemed quite familiar, but she couldn't recall where she met him.

"Hey baby, I'm back" the man said with a smile as he took off his sunglasses. As soon as the man took off his sunglasses, caira's lips dropped open as she stared at him in shock.

"Noah?" She muttered in astonishment.

TBC

My Better Half

Highschool crush

Authoress Prudence

Episode 44

"Yes baby, I'm back" Noah said as he advanced towards her

"How... how did you find me?" caira stuttered still in shock.

"C'mon sweetie, that doesn't matter, the good thing is that I'm back now, and I'm back for good" Noah said as he attempted holding her by the waist, but Mikel was quick a enough to stop him.

"Oh, so it was true all along, you left me for your celebrity boyfriend. It's such an honor to meet you Mikel Camford" Noah said to Mikel as he stretched

forth his right hand for an hand shake, but Mikel turned him down as he only stared at him in disgust.

"Noah, get out of my house now" caira in anger.

"C'mon caira, I just arrived, wouldn't you offer me a seat" Noah said sarcastically.

"I said leave" caira yelled out in tears. Noah attempted saying something but Mikel interrupted rudely.

"She said leave" Mikel said to Noah.

"You too Mikel" caira muttered bitterly. While Mikel hesitated for a while before deeping his hand into his pocket and bringing out a small card.

"This is my home address, you can come see me just in case you need anything, I'll be glad to help" Mikel stated as he stretched out his right hand with his card on it.

"I don't want it, I'll never need you" caira said, but

Mikel moved towards her and pushed the paper in between her bust and walked away. Caira got pissed by Mikel's guts, so she pulled out the card, shredding it into tiny pieces.

She stood fuming in anger and watched on as Mikel drove out of her apartment.

"Caira, I missed you alot" Noah said, jolting caira out of her thoughts.

"Noah please leave now, I wouldn't want my mom to find you here" caira said

"Is that my baby girl over there" Noah said as he stared at little Amanda who was distanced away from them.

"What do you mean" caira asked in confusion.

"Oh, I heard you now have a child, at first I thought of leaving Germany to come strangle the life out of you, but I became relaxed when I found out that it was my child" Noah said, making caira more

confused.

"Noah, please leave now, I understand what you're talking about" caira muttered as she placed her hand on her forehead, but Noah walked to the little girl and squatted in front of her .

"Here you go, baby" Noah said as he brought out a candy from his pocket and handed it over to the little girl, but she hesitated even though she badly wanted to accept the candy.

"My mom said I shouldn't accept anything from a stranger" the little muttered with her eyes lingering on the colorful candy

"I'm not a stranger, I'm your dad" Noah said with a smirk while the little girl's eyes widened in shock.

"You're also my dad?" The little girl asked in delight

"Yes" Noah lied

"Cool!!!, Mommy, how come you never told me

that I have two daddies?" The little girl asked ignorantly

"Come here Mandy, he's not your dad" caira said while her daughter's face curved in a frown.

"But mom...he said he's my daddy, why can't I accept his candy" the little girl asked begrudgingly.

"Don't worry Mandy, I'll get you some candies" caira said as she held onto her daughter

### The\_Next\_Day

Caira woke up the next morning and performed her usual routine of making her daughter's meal, getting her ready for school and dropping her off at school. As soon as she got back, she also made breakfast for herself and her mom, before getting ready for job hunting. Yes, she was now jobless, all thanks to Mikel for making her resign and losing the only thing that fetch her money, but this time, she was going for a rather decent job. She stared at

her beautiful reflection on the mirror, She was neatly dressed in a corporate black and white outfit.

"Mom, how do I look" caira muttered as she turned around in excitement.

"Wow, look who's looking beautiful and decent today, where are you off to?" Her mum asked walking down the stairs.

"Well, you've always wanted me to quit stripping, so I've decided to find a more decent job" caira said with a shrug while her mother smiled broadly.

"That's my girl!!!. So, which company or office are you heading to" her mom asked

"Well, I'm not quite certain of my direction, but I'll be heading to "Xioami first" caira stated in excitement.

"What company is that and where is it located" caira's mom asked



"OMG!! Please don't tell me that you don't know what "Xioami" is?" Caira asked in bemusement.

"I really don't know, I guess I'm old school" her mom answered with a shrug while caira laughed at her ignorance.

"Xioami is a Chinese owned company in new York, they produce phones and electrical appliances, they've got branches all over the world and they are the highest paying company." Caira said brushing her hair gently

"Oh, okay, have a nice day then" her mom muttered while caira gave her a peck before leaving the house. After a long drive in the taxi, she finally arrived at "Xioami world". She knocked on the big gate and waited for a response, soon the gate opened revealing the face of an old man in his late 50's.

"How can I help you young lady" the man asked with an hard stare

"Good morning sir, I came to apply for a job vacancy" caira responded.

" Come in, this company just got commissioned few days ago, the CEO is not always in office, but you can see his manager and make any inquiry about vacancy" the man said as he led caira inside while caira wowed at the sight in front of her, the whole place was breathtaking she was sure it really cost a lot of money

"Thanks for this information, I'll surely see the manager" caira said while the man nodded and left. In no time, she got into the building and scoured her eyes around the room, she saw few workers who were busy doing nothing. So, She walked towards a lady with silver hair and greeted her with the hope of getting a useful information from her

"Good morning ma'am" caira greeted the young lady who should probably be in her early 30's.

"Morning darling, how can I help you" the nice lady responded jovially.

"Please, I'm heading towards the manager's office, I'll like to submit my CV for an employment" caira said

"Sure, I'll take you there" the lady said walking away while caira followed behind her greatfully. After a long walk, they finally arrived at the manager's office, the lady who had brought caira there, left While caira knocked nervously and came in when she heard a feminine voice ushering her in.

"Good morning ma'am" caira greeted upon walking into the managers office..

"Good morning Miss, please have your seat" the lady said ushering caira a seat opposite her.

"Thank you madam" caira greeted as she sat down cautiously.

"So, how can I help you" the lady asked as she

took of her glasses.

"I came to submit my CV, just in case there is any vacancy" caira said handing over her portfolio to the woman, while she accepted it. She opened caira's portfolio and went through her CV quietly while caira waited for her response anxiously. After series of checks, the woman sighed quietly and placed caira's CV back into her portfolio.

"Young lady, your qualification is just too low to secure you a job here, you only have a junior highschool certificate and other award certificate" the woman said handing over caira's CV back to her.

"I know ma'am, I was just hoping if I can get a menial or part-time job that can help me take care of my family" caira said while the manager stared at her for a while before answering.

"I don't know young lady, the CEO of this company is in need of a secretary. For now, he isn't available,

but I'm sure he'll resume soon. You look smart and decorous to me, and I'm sure you'll fit in for a secretary. But you can only work as a part-time secretary and earn some Money before he resume work, but if he resumes and is not satisfied with your educational qualification and performance, then I'm sorry but you'll have to find another job." The woman said with a shrug.

kindly hi novelsrepublic on WhatsApp on plus two three four eight zero five five eight eight nine one right three to get added to the novels group

"Okay ma'am, thank you for your consideration, I'll not let you down" caira said gratefully.

"You're welcome pretty, you'll undergo a visual interview tomorrow and I'll get back to you if you're hired" the woman said while caira nodded in agreement. Caira submitted her application letter and other needful information about her self before leaving the office. the woman was really

God sent, caira left the office hopefully, funny enough, she forgot to ask for the name of the CEO who owns the company.

After her interview, she was called upon to work as a part-time secretary, she was glad because that was her first decent job since she moved to New York. But she worked anxiously because the CEO was yet to resume office. it was over a month since she started working as a secretary for a CEO who seemed to be ghosting around, she couldn't help but questioned herself on what type of a CEO the person was. No doubt, a lot of money was spent on building the mighty company and his workers were still getting paid monthly, but the so called \*CEO\* was yet to show up in office. He was paying his workers for a job that isn't being supervised, what sort of a CEO was he?. He was supposed to be in office to monitor his sales and employees, but he was no where to be found.

In as much as caira wanted to see the unserious CEO's face, she also wished he never resume office. What if he resumes and complains that her qualification was not up to his standards, she would definitely be fired. Her monthly salary was really nice and pays better than stripping, and she wasn't ready to let go of her new job.

\*\*\*\*\*

Mikel sat on his couch as he held a shisha pipe, constantly puffing out smoke. Shortly, he heard his phone ringing out, so he checked the caller and discovered that it was his manager, he sighed tiredly as he placed down his shisha pipe and picked-up the call.

"Hello sir" his manager voice was heard over the phone.

"Hello Sarah, how can I help you" he asked pretending not to know why she was calling

"Sir, it's been two months since the company got commissioned, I hired so many people like you instructed and we received so many invoice already, but you are yet to resume office. I'm afraid that something might go wrong if you don't resume soon" his manager said nicely.

"I'll come over whenever I'm less busy" Mikel answered while his manager sighed, she knew he wasn't coming over, that was what he always say whenever she calls, but he never show up.

"Okay, sir. Thanks for your time" his manager said hesitantly and ended the call.

Mikel sat reminiscing on what he just said, he has been promising to come over, but he doesn't feel like going anywhere. He felt his conscience fighting him as he sat down, he was actually doing nothing at home.

He sighed again as he finally decided to visit the company, he had a quick shower and headed out



of his apartment. In no time, he arrived at the company and packed his car in the parking lot before stepping out. As soon as he got inside the building, he picked up his phone and was about dialing his manager's number when he sighted her running towards him.

"Good day sir, it's nice to finally have you here, I'll show you to your office" his manager said walking ahead of him while Mikel followed behind him.

Soon, they arrived at the receptionist office, but mikel stopped walking when he saw someone who caught his attention, she was sitting at the receptionist desk, with a computer in front of her. as he advanced towards her, she equally turned around and was brought aback by his presence.

"Sorry sir, I almost forgot. This is caira Hudson, she is the secretary I hired" the woman announced with a smile.

"What are you doing here and why are you

everywhere around me" caira asked as she stood up.

"Miss caira, this is Mikel Camford, he is the CEO of this great company" Mikel's manager also announced.

"That's enough Sarah, you can leave us" Mikel said while his manager nodded and left. Silence stepped in as soon as Mikel's manager left, they both stared keenly at each other for a while before Mikel decided to break the silence.

"What a small world, I never thought we'll meet again after you sent me out of your house that day, it's nice to have you as my secretary" Mikel said as he stretched out his hand for a hand shake, but caira declined.

"This can't be happening again, I just can't work under you. I quit!!" Caira said as she picked up her bag to leave, but Mikel stopped her.

"C'mon caira, we can work together. We'll make a good college together, or maybe couple" Mikel said hilariously

"I'm not doing this shit with you again, The last time I served as a maid in your home, you almost ruined my life" caira stated in anger.

"Caira, I'm not saying we should come back together, I only wish you can work here and earn a living" Mikel lied.

Caira seemed to buy Mikel's idea as she stood in contemplation for a while. If she quit her new job, she might not be lucky enough to find another decent job except she wants to go back to stripping at night clubs or doing menial jobs that doesn't require higher qualification, and that was a \*NO\*, she wasn't ready to go back to stripping, so she just had to keep the job, her rents was expiring soon and she needed enough money to pay for a rent renewal, her mother's life was at stake and

she needed money for her hospital bills.

"Fine, I'll work here, but only on one condition" Caira stated with an eye roll.

"What's that?" Mikel asked

"If you'll stop flirting with me, treat me like an ordinary secretary and nothing more, keep your distance and act like nothing ever happened between us in the past. **\*NO STRINGS ATTACHED\***" Caira said while Mikel hesitated for a while before answering.

"Sure, you'll only be my secretary, No strings attached." Mikel repeated hesitantly.

A\_Week\_Later.

Caira compiled some group of documents on her hands as she headed towards Mikel's office, it's been a week since she started working as Mikel's secretary and things has been going quite well. Although, Mikel do try to engage her in friendly

discussions most times, but she was always pushing him away. She pushed his office door open and found him doing what he loves the most, but he placed it down as soon as she stepped in.

"Sir, here are the documents you requested for" caira said as she placed the documents on his table and was about leaving when he called her back.

"Going somewhere?" Mikel asked as his office chair rotate left and right.

"Yes sir, I'm going home, it's already past 5:00pm" caira answered.

"Well, I haven't given you the permission to go home, you're my secretary, you are supposed to wait till your boss is out of the office" Mikel stated.

"Well, I'm your secretary, not your personal assistant, I don't think waiting for you to go home is part of my job as a secretary" caira mentioned

while Mikel chuckled silently.

"Okay, I'm making you my personal Assistant" Mikel announced while caira beautiful eyes glinted in shock.

"I don't want to be your P.A, I'm fine being your secretary" caira complained as she stamped her feet against the floor.

"I'm not asking you to be my secretary, it's an order in which you must obey, I'm not giving you an option" Mikel said with a Stern look.

"Okay boss" caira answered sarcastically

"You'll drive me home tonight" Mikel stated with a smirk.

"I don't know how to drive, how do you---

"I'll teach you" Mikel muttered as he walked towards caira.

"Pack up my bag and come with me" Mikel said

again as he left the office while caira hesitated before picking up his heavy bag and trailing behind him slowly. Mikel got into his car and sat at the driver's seat while caira sat close to him, Mikel started his engine and took off.

"Where are we going" caira asked as she stared at the road.

"Uhhh...to the butchers shop" Mikel answered maintaining focus on the road.

"What are we going to do at the butcher's shop" caira asked keenly, the butcher's shop was where animals were being slaughtered.

"Well, I'll like to open up your chest, steal your heart and chop off your brain" Mikel answered with a Stern look while caira shrieked in fear. She turned abruptly as she stared at Mikel's face to see if he was serious, but Mikel maintained a blank expression, making it difficult to detect if he actually meant what he said.

"Pull over Mikel, I'm going down" caira said as she tried opening the door but mikel laughed out.

"Relax miss secretary, I'm not a killer. I just want us to grab a drink at the coffee shop" Mikel said as he chuckled.

"I didn't ask you to take me to the coffee shop" caira said as she glared at him.

"Well, I just want us to discuss business at a quiet place, or would you prefer to have a business meeting at my house" Mikel asked as he stared at her, making her uncomfortable.

"Sir, please drive to the coffee shop and focus, so we don't get involved in an accident" caira muttered in discomfort as she looked away, while Mikel smirked and drove in silence.

In no time, they arrived at the coffee shop and Mikel ordered a coffee for the both of them, caira never uttered a word to Mikel while at the coffee



shop, she only sipped her coffee slowly, in attempts to dodge Mikel's questions and to avoid Mikel's constant stares. Soon, they left the coffee shop and headed to Mikel's apartment, for the first time after a while, caira looked up to speak to Mikel.

"Where is this?" Caira asked as she stared at the big building in front of her.

"This is my apartment, you can come over whenever you like" Mikel said as he turned off the car engine.

"So--- why did you bring me here" caira answered exhaustedly

"Just in case you might need me some days, you can always find me here" Mikel answered with a shrug.

"And why do you think I'll ever need you? Please unlock your car and let me out, it's already late, I

have a daughter to look after" caira answered

"You can't go back home now, it isn't safe out there" Mikel said while caira furrowed her brows in confusion.

"So, what do you expect me to do" caira asked

"You can spend a night at my house, don't worry, I live alone" Mikel said hopefully.

"Wait,....were you intentional delaying me, so you can ask me to sleep over at your house tonight?" Caira asked with a scuff.

"Uhhh....not really" Mikel lied

"Well, I don't care how dangerous it is to go back home alone by this time of the night, but I'm not sleeping over at your place, I'll find my way home alone" caira said as she picked up her purse and belongings.

"Alright, I'll drop you off" Mikel said hesitantly while caira muttered a "thank you" within her.

After a long drive, Mikel finally arrived at caira's apartment. Caira was about stepping out when he called her back.

"Caira..."

"Miss caira, if you don't mind" caira corrected while Mikel smiled to himself

"Sorry miss caira, I've been willing to ask you something" Mikel staring directly at her while caira nodded in affirmation.

"Have you moved on?" Mikel asked while she froze for a moment.

"Yes" caira replied after a brief silence.

"Fine. But I just want to know if I have any hope of winning you back" Mikel said in a low tone, his eyes boring into hers

"No, I'm already in love with someone else" caira lied while Mikel sighed.

"I don't care if you are already in a relationship with someone else, I only hope we can get back to the way we used to be" Mikel asked again.

"You don't understand Mikel, we can never come back together" caira said almost in a whisper.

"Why, why can't you give me a chance, I know I let you down but I'm willing to....."

"Because I'm already engaged" caira said aloud as she lifted her left finger showcasing her engagement ring.

TBC            My better half

                  Highschool crush

Authoress Prudence

                  Episode 46

Caira regained her senses as she climbed down the table quickly, she felt embarrassed that his manager had to meet her and her boss in a

compromising state, but at the same time, she felt glad that his manager interrupted. She almost got carried away, but good thing his manager arrived just in time.

"Want do you want" Mikel said jerking his manager out of her thoughts.

"Uhhh....I'm so sorry sir, I----wa--s on my way out" his manager stammered as she left immediately, slamming the door. Mikel sighed as soon as his manager left his office.

"I'm sorry, I got carried away" Mikel stated as he sank his fingers into his thick hair.

"I can fire her if you feel she might make you uncomfortable" Mikel said with a shrug, making caira look at him in shock.

"Fire her?, Why would you do that" caira asked in a low tone

"Well, since she caught us in.....

"I don't want you to fire her, it's not her fault, it's mine. I'm such an idiot who never learn from her mistake" caira said as she packed up her ruffled hair into a fine ponytail before walking out of his office.

"Caira, I'm sorry" Mikel said but she ignored him as she walked out of his office quickly.

### The\_Next\_Day

Caira rolled on her bed restlessly, she couldn't stop thinking about her encounter with Mikel the previous day, if his manager had not interrupted, would they have had sex?. This was the reason why she left Seoul, Mikel really let her down many times, but any time he come around, she always find her self forgiving him and accepting him back no matter how serious he hurt her. After she gave birth to Amanda, She was afraid that she was going to forgive him again, so she had to move far away from him. Unfortunately, he showed up in her life

again, and here she was, falling for him again after all he did to her. After so many years apart, she still find it hard to believe that Mikel's touch still had effect on her and still drives her crazy. She would be a fool to fall for him again and let history repeat itself.

She was still deep in thoughts when she heard her phone ringing out loud, jerking her out of her thoughts. She picked up her phone and checked who the caller was, it was a strange number. She hesitated for a while, before answering the call.

"Hello caira" a familiar voice said over the phone.

"Hello, who's this please?" Caira answered wondering who it was.

"It's Mikel. Why aren't you in work today, I'm so sorry if it's about what happened yesterday" Mikel stated while caira hanged up quickly. She never knew he was the caller, she wouldn't have taken the call. She guess he must have gotten her

number from her submitted CV.

His call kept coming over and over again, and when she was sick and tired of listening to her ringtone, she switched off her phone and rested her head on her soft pillow.

Not long after Caira had laid down to rest, she felt someone tapping on her shoulder softly. When she managed to open her eyes, she saw her mum sitting on the bed.

"Honey, what's the problem, you didn't go to work today?" Her mum asked.

"Uhhh... today is my off day" caira lied.

"Ok, what about Amanda, where is she" her mum asked while caira jumped down the bed in shock.

"Oh my gosh!!! Mandy is still at school" caira said as she stood up and ran to her wardrobe. She changed her wears, and picked up her purse and phone.



"Caira, how could you be so careless, it's 3:00pm and Mandy is still at school!!! C'mon, her school closes by 2:00pm, you're an hour late!!" Her mom scolded.

"I'm sorry mum, I slept off" caira said as she picked up her phone quickly and headed out of the house.

In no time, she arrived at Amanda's school, she paid the cab driver off and ran to Amanda's classroom. As soon as she got in, she saw the daily minder sitting at the left corner of the classroom.

"Good day ma'am, I'm so sorry I'm late, where is my daughter" caira asked upon walking to the daily minder's desk.

"Good day Miss, her father just came to pick her now" the chubby white woman with blonde hair said with a broad smile, but caira's purse fell from her hands in shock.

"What do you mean?, Who came to pick her up"

caira asked in shock

"Well, a man came today and introduced himself as her Dad, I asked her if he was really her dad because I've never seen him around, but she admitted that he was her dad" the daily minder replied.

"And you released her to a stranger without my knowledge!!?" Caira asked at an alarming rate

"I'm sorry Miss, I thought he was her dad" the daily minder said realizing her mistake.

"Oh my goodness!! I feel like strangling you to death right now, just hope nothing happens to my daughter!!" Caira said as she gritted her teeth in anger.

"I'm so sorry, if you leave now, I'm sure you'll be able to catch up with them, he just left now. By the way, he picked her up in a black car" the daily minder said sincerely, but this only got caira pissed.

"Seriously, how fast do I need to run to be able to catch up with a car? What sort of a daily minder are you?..urghh!!! I hate this school" caira said as she left the school immediately and headed to Mikel's apartment. She knew it was Mikel, of course!, Who else could it be.

"I'm so squeezing the life out of him, what gives him the right to pick up my daughter and take her home without my permission!" Caira mumbled to herself as she took a cab to Mikel's place.

After a long drive, she finally arrived at Mikel's apartment, she highlighted from the cab and knocked on the big gate loudly. At first, there was no response, so she picked up a stone, using it to hit the gate hardly. After several attempts, the gate opened, reviling the face of an heavily built man.

"How can I help you and why are you banging the gate so loud" the man said in anger.

"It's your boss home?" Caira asked impatiently

"Yes, who are you" the man asked

"I'll like to see him right now" caira said as she tried making her way in, but the man blocked the way with his body

"Let me in, your boss is a bad person, he kidnapped my daughter" caira said at the top of her voice as she kept struggling to get in.

"You can't come in without any invitation from him" the man said as he stood his ground.

"Mikel, get your ass down here right now!!!" caira uttered with a loud voice. Luckily, Caira sighted him coming out of the house. Mikel was equally shocked to see her, because he never expected that she would ever come to his place.

"Nicole, let her in" Mikel said to the guard who was restricting caira from coming in. The man let go of her begrudgingly, while caira ran to Mikel, as soon as she got close to him, she felt the urge to hit him

really hard, but she got hold of her self.

"Where's my daughter" caira asked in anger

"Come in darling, don't you think it's nice if we discuss inside?" Mikel asked ushering her in.

Without hesitation, caira walked into his house impatiently.

"Amanda, Amanda... Mandy!!!!" Caira called out for her daughter as scoured her eyes round the room, but she didn't receive any response.

"Amanda isn't here" Mikel answered walking into the sitting room.

"Mikel where did you hide my daughter, if you don't tell me where she is, I'll call the cops on you" caira threatened with tears brewing up in her eyes.

"Okay. First, you accused me of stalking you, and now you're accusing me of adopting your daughter, seriously??" Mikel asked, seeing how serious she was, but caira busted into tears immediately.

"Mikel, please release my daughter to me now, she's all I've got, please don't take her away from me" caira said in tears as she fell on her feet. Mikel felt deeply sorry for her, he wished he could help her, but he wasn't with her daughter and he had no reason to abduct her daughter.

He reached out for her on the floor and wiped her tears cautiously before moving his left hand to her chin, Caira equally placed her hands on his hand as waited anxiously for his reply.

"Amanda is not here, I have no reason to abduct her" Mikel said sincerely.

"Mikel, I'm ready to do anything you ask, please let me see my daughter" caira pleaded in tears while Mikel only sighed tiredly. she seemed so convinced that he had her daughter, meanwhile, he don't.

She was still in tears when she heard her phone ringing out, she opened her purse slowly and picked up the phone, she checked who the caller

was, but it was a strange number, so she cleared her throats before answering the call.

"Hello" she said with a breaking voice

"don't bother looking for Amanda, she's under my care" the voice said over the phone.

"Who's this and what do you want" caira asked in fear.

"It's Noah" he answered.

"Noah, you are making a very big mistake, Amanda is not your daughter" caira said.

"What did you take me for, an idiot?, I know she's your child, which is why I'm abducting her" Noah said

"Please let her go, she's just a child. I'm the one you want, why are you involving her in this?" caira said in tears while Mikel listened in curiosity.

"Caira, you really think you can cheat on me and

leave me for another man, I'll make you wish you never met me" Noah threatened

"What do you want Noah, just say it, but please don't hurt her, it's not her fault" caira cried out

"What I want is quite easy, can you afford it" Noah asked, she could feel him smirk in satisfaction as he spoke.

"Yes!! Anything, please don't hurt her" caira said while Mikel waited anxiously for her to end the call

"Kill Mikel Camford" Noah said. As soon as caira heard him say that, her phone fell freely from her hands in shock.

TBC

My better half

Highschool Crush

Authoress Prudence

Episode 48



"Are you okay?" Mikel asked when he discovered that she wasn't listening.

"Uhhh..sure, I'm fine. I'll go change my clothes now" Caira said as she hid the knife back and picked up the clothes on the bed, before leaving his room

As soon as she got to her room, she picked up her phone and gave Noah a call.

"Hello, I killed him, how can I get my daughter back" Caira said.

"I don't believe you will kill him so soon, but I just hope you ain't lying to me" Noah said.

" Please don't hurt her, I really killed him" Caira said in a low tone.

" If I find out you're lying, I wouldn't be sending anymore warnings to you, but I'll be sending her head to you" Noah threatened while Caira shivered in fear.

"I'll kill him, please give me more time and let me speak with my daughter first" Caira pleaded.

"You can speak to her after the job is done" Noah muttered coldly.

"Noah why do you want to kill Mikel, he is innocent, you don't even know him." Caira muttered with a sniff

"Well, I just want you to know how it feels when someone you love leaves you, I want you to feel the pain of loneliness. you have 48 hours left"  
Noah replied as he hanged up.

As soon as Noah ended the call, Caira lay on the bed and cried silently. How would she manage to kill the person she love when she can't even bare to hurt her own enemy. Time wasn't on her side and she needed to act fast. She couldn't stab him, No, that will be a very bloody sight and would inflict a lot of pain on him, she'd rather give him a more easier death.

\*\*\*\*\*

Mikel sat at the sitting room playing a video game when Caira walked to him with a glass of milk.

"Here you go" Caira said with a fake smile as she placed the glass of milk on the table.

"Thank you, would you like to join me?" Mikel asked handing over a gamepad to her.

"No, I don't know how to play" Caira muttered as she sat beside him.

"Well, I can teach you" Mikel said, but Caira was lost in thoughts, the milk on the table was actually poisoned and he would die if he takes it, it wasn't too late to stop him, but if he doesn't die, Noah was definitely going to kill her daughter. Caira watched as he placed his gamepad down and picked up the glass of milk, he was about drinking it when she stopped him.

"Wait, don't drink it!!" Caira said aloud while Mikel

stopped.

"Why?" Mikel asked in confusion.

"Well, it's mine, hand it over to me" Caira said as she attempted collecting the glass of milk from Mikel, but he moved away with it.

"You can get yourself another glass of milk at the kitchen" Mikel said with a shrug

"No, I want this one!!" Caira said as she also stood up, she had a change of heart, She wasn't sure if she was ready to watch him die, maybe some other time.

"Please give it back to me now, don't take it, it's not yours" Caira said as she tried hitting the milk away from his hand, but Mikel quickly drank the whole content.

"Oops!! Sorry, I swear I didn't drink it on purpose" Mikel stated playfully as he licked his lips. Caira went numb as she stared at him in surprise, he

actually drank it, she poisoned him!! Her eyes slowly drifted to the empty cup before bursting into tears.

"Mikel, why did you take the milk" Caira said hitting his arm

"I'm sorry, I'm sorry I drank your milk, I'll get you another cup" Mikel said in confusion

"You don't know what you've done to your self, let's go the hospital" Caira cried out as she she picked up his car key and attempted dragging him out of the house.

"The hospital, why?" Mikel asked as he stared at Caira who was acting strangely. After several attempts, Caira wiped her tears and ran to the refrigerator, she fetched a glass of milk for her self and headed towards her room with it, she picked up a small bottle containing some powder and emptied the entire content into the glass of milk, and without further hesitation, she over turned the

milk into her mouth, gulping everything down. As soon as she emptied the glass, she sighted Mikel in her room. She felt relieved but at the same time stupid, now that she also poisoned herself, she wouldn't have to live her entire life with guilt, but who was going to rescue her daughter?.

"I'm so sorry Mikel, I'm sorry, I wish you could forgive me" Caira said as she ran to Mikel, hugging him for a very long time.

"Forgive you for what?" Mikel asked

"First of all, the reason I left Seoul was because I was scared I might forgive you if I don't go far away from you. Forget what I said about you, I don't hate you, I love you, I love you so much and I've always dreamt of spending the rest of my life with you, I'm so sorry this have to happen" Caira said rather too quickly, with the fear that he might not be able to last more than a minute.

"It's fine, just tell me....."

"It's not fine, I poisoned the milk, Noah said I'll have to kill you if I want to have my daughter back. I only wish we could be together in our next life" Caira said in tears, but she was brought aback by Mikel's reaction, He actually laughed out while Caira stared at him in confusion.

"I'm serious, I poisoned the drink....

"I know, you were acting quite suspicious, so I spied on you, I also over heard your conversation with him earlier" Mikel said as he wrapped his arms around her waist.

"As for the poison, I poured out all the content and replaced it with some cocaine" Mikel said while Caira threw her self freely on him.

"I'm sorry" Caira muttered in relief as she placed her head on his chest.

"Silly, why would you keep this away from me" Mikel asked as he pinched her nose playfully.

"I'm sorry, I was just scared that he might hurt my daughter" Caira said with a pout. She felt a heavy burden being lifted, she couldn't understand how exactly she felt. She was relieved that Mikel was aware of her plans to kill him, but she was also scared because Noah warned her not to disclose it to anyone.

"She's also my daughter, remember?" Mikel asked while Caira nodded in affirmation.

"He said I shouldn't disclose the plan to anyone, what should I do now" Caira asked

"tell him that you've succeeded in killing me" Mikel said

"What if he finds out I'm lying,he might kill her" Caira said in fear.

"And how would he know you're lying?" Mikel also asked while Caira gave it a second thought before dialing Noah's number, as soon as he picked up,



she put the call on speaker phone, to enable Mikel hear him loud and clear.

"Hello, the job is done" Caira said

"Good, you can come for your daughter if you really killed him, I wouldn't wanna repeat the consequences of lying to me" Noah threatened while Caira gulped hard before giving him a answer.

"Yes" Caira responded in fear.

"I'll text you my location, come alone, do not try to act smart" Noah said as he hanged up. Few minutes after he hanged up, Caira received a text from him stating his location.

"He sent his location" Caira said as she buckled up her shirt and was about leaving when Mikel called back.

"You can't go alone" Mikel stated walking towards her.

"I can take care of my self you don't need to worry, I don't want you to get involved in this" Caira responded impatiently.

" No, I'm going with you" Mikel said persistently

\*\*\*\*\*

Mikel drove her all the way to the address, as soon as they arrived at the location, she saw a building from afar which was on fire, there were fire men and ambulance vehicle with some spectators who watched pathetically. Caira became confused because that was exactly the same address Noah sent to her, where could he have probably been. She tried calling his number but it wasn't reachable, so she walked amidst the crowd with Mikel behind her, she needed some clarification because it seemed she's got the wrong address.

She met one of the fire officer who seemed to be the team leader, so she decided to ask her some questions to know if she was at the right place.

"Good day ma'am, is this Brownsville's old play house?" Caira asked

"Yes it is" the woman answered.

"Okay, what happened here?" Caira asked

"Well, I don't really know, the building suddenly caught fire as soon as a young man drove out, there's also a little child locked in there" the woman said while Caira became alarmed.

"A child? Is it a boy or a girl?, What about the man?" Caira asked at an alarming rate as she fervently prayed that it wasn't what she was thinking.

"Well, he was our first suspect, so we sent the cops after him" the woman said.

Caira picked up her phone in shaky hands and was about calling Noah again when she saw his text.

"I kept my word, you can get your daughter's ashes in the burning building, see you....." Caira read

out

TBC

My better half

Highschool crush

By authoress Prudence

Episode 45

"Because I'm already engaged" caira said as she raised up her left finger, showcasing her engagement ring. Caira expected to see Mikel in shock, but his reaction got her really surprised as he only smiled.

", What's funny" caira asked in confusion.

"Nothing, see you at work tomorrow" Mikel said with a smile.

"You're so weird" caira mumbled with an eye roll as she stepped out of his car.

"One more thing, please give this to my baby girl"

Mikel said as he brought out a red teddy bear and a pink polythene bag

"Thanks, but my baby isn't lacking teddies, she has more than enough" caira said

"Well, I'll hand it over to her myself" Mikel said and was about stepping out of the car but caira stopped him.

"No need, I'll do it myself" caira said as she collected the gifts from Mikel begrudgingly.

"Tell her it's a gift from daddy. Please send my regards to your mum" Mikel said to caira while she ignored him and ran into the house.

Caira opened the door silently and sneaked in. She shut the door quietly, ensuring that the door doesn't make any cracky noise. good thing the lights were all turned off and Amanda seemed to be deep asleep. She held her pairs of shoes up in her hand and attempted sneaking into her room

quietly. Just when she was about leaving the sitting room, the lights suddenly came on, Caira fluttered up in fear as the pink polythene bag fell from her hands.

"Mum, you scared me!!" Caira said trying to keep her voice low, to avoid waking her daughter up

"Why are you just coming home, did you visit anyone after work" her mom asked with her hands at akimbo.

"Yes mum, but I had a hectic day at work, can we please talk about this tomorrow?" Caira said with a sigh.

"Honey, You were supposed to be back home by 5:30pm, but it's already 9:15pm, what really happened? And can I know the person who dropped you off just now?" Her mother asked

"Mom, he's nobody" caira answered picking up the gifts from the floor.

"Okay, what's your relationship with this  
\*NOBODY\*?" caira's mom asked

"that was my boss, we went for a business meeting  
and he decided to drop me off since it was already  
late" caira answered tiredly

"Wow, that's so nice of him, I'll really like to meet  
this boss of yours, and know what his intentions  
really are" caira's mom said sincerely.

"Mom, he's just my boss, there is nothing going on  
between us" caira said taking her sit on the couch

"Caira, you should know I don't have a problem  
with you hanging out with any body, I only want to  
know who he is. You are already 24 years old and  
you're due for marriage. But you are not in any  
relationship. you have to move on caira, Amanda's  
dad is never coming back, and even if he does, I  
won't let him get married to you after all he did to  
you, he left you to suffer alone, I never knew Noah  
would ever be this heartless and inconsiderate, he

never bothered to call you, he isn't even anxious to see his daughter's face" caira's mom said bitterly

"Mom, I've moved on a long time ago" caira said

"No dear, for the past 6 years, you always avoid me whenever I talk about marriage, you even rejected Cole's proposal last year. you and Cole used to be very close and I'm sure you like him, but you turned him down, saying you were not ready.

When will you be ready?, Please follow your heart and let love lead, don't waste your life waiting on any man" caira's mum said said in concern

"Mom, I'm fine, I don't need a man in my life, I've got you and Amanda by my side, what more can I ask for?" Caira asked with a faux smile.

"I might not be always there for you, I'm getting old and my heart is gradually getting weak, I'm afraid I might not always be there when you need me" caira's mom complained.



"Mom, don't say that, I won't sit and watch you die. I promise, I'll raise enough money for your surgery" caira said

"Caira, the amount of money needed for the surgery is just too much to be wasted on an old lady like me, I'm already 70, and I've lived long enough" caira's mom said almost in a whisper, but caira got hold of her right hand

"No Mom, I'll try my best to save up enough money for your bills, I promise." Caira said as she pulled her mother in a warm hug.

The\_Next\_day

Caira pushed Mikel's door open gently and walked in. Mikel smiled mischievously as soon as he saw her walking into his office.

"Sir, you sent for me" caira said upon getting to his desk.

"Have your seat" Mikel said while caira walked

slowly and sat down at the chair opposite him.

"It's quite early to begin work, let's have coffee together first" Mikel stated as he poured coffee into two mugs, he took one for him self and handed over the other mug to caira.

"Sir, I'm your secretary, why should I take coffee with you" caira asked

"You made this coffee your self, didn't you" Mikel asked as he sipped from his cup of coffee

"Yes, I did" caira answered

"Is there anything wrong if I ask you to take from the same coffee you made?" Mikel asked while caira took the cup of coffee hesitantly and drank from it.

Silence stepped in as they drank their coffee in anxiety, caira felt really uncomfortable sitting opposite Mikel, as he kept staring at her occasionally.

In less than 5 minutes, caira overturned the entire content into her mouth and stood up to leave.

"Why the rush?" Mikel asked caira

"I finished the coffee already and I've got work to do" caira answered, but Mikel stood up and walked towards her.

He stood very close to her as he stared directly into her eyes, Caira lowered her head quickly to avoid eye contact, but Mikel used his right hand to raise her chin up slowly. he sighted a strand of hair, lying carelessly on her face, so he moved his hands to her face and tucked in the hair carefully behind the back of her left ear.

"Thank you" caira muttered nervously, not knowing exactly why she was thanking him.

"Ever since I found you, we've not talked about our self" Mikel said, his eyes boring into hers.

"What do we have to talk about" caira asked with

her gaze fixed on his lips.

"You've not told me why you left and what I did wrong" Mikel said

"There's nothing to talk about, it's all over now. I'd better get back to work" caira said and was about leaving, but Mikel grabbed her waist and pulled her close to himself while caira placed her hands on his chest to avoid her breast hitting against his chest. Mikel stared directly at her lips while she stared down. He moved his face closer to hers and kissed her, she attempted pulling out of his arms, but his grip around her was firm, so she had no choice than to shut her eyes and allow him savour her lips.

Unconsciously, caira also moved her hands to the back of his neck and closed her eyes in pleasure, his lips brushed hers softly, just long enough that she could inhale his breath, and enjoy the taste of his lips. Things got heated up as his cravings for

her increased, he held her up with his manly strength and placed her on his desk, making all the content on the table fall on the floor. Without breaking the kiss, he raised her skirt slowly and moved his hand to her thighs while she moaned into his lips. She also extended her hands to his hair, giving it a light squeeze. Mikel was about taking of her jacket when the door opened abruptly, reviling the face of Mikel's manager who was already in shock.

TBC

My better half

Highschool crush

Authoress Prudence.

Episode 47

Caira fell on the couch while Mikel moved to her in curiosity.

"Amanda has been kidnapped" caira said in tears.

"How much did her abductor request for" Mikel asked concerned, he was ready to pay anything to ensure that his daughter was released, but caira never knew how she was to answer him. Noah didn't ask for money, he asked for something really impossible for her to do

"Talk to me caira, how much does he want, I can pay him off right now" Mikel said as he placed his right hand on her chin but caira only stared at him in tears, not knowing what to tell him.

Few\_Hours\_Later

Caira sat at Mikel's sitting room as she dialed Noah's number repeatedly, but it was switched off. it was obvious that he intentionally switched it off to avoid being tracked by the cops. After several attempts, She gave up as she threw her phone on the couch, sobbing while Mikel watched helplessly. He still couldn't understand why she had refused to speak to him. Few minutes later, she heard her

phone ringing out loud and it was her mom. She became tensed up when she saw her mom's call, she can't tell her that Amanda has been kidnapped, No!!, That will only complicate things. Her mother's health was at stake, and she don't know how she would react if she finds out that her granddaughter has been kidnapped.

"My mom is calling" caira muttered worriedly

" Sorry for keeping you, she must be worried about you, I'll drop you off now" Mikel stated as he picked up his car key.

"No, I don't want to go back home, I can't tell her that Amanda has been kidnapped, she's suffering from a heart disease and am afraid that she won't be able to take the news lightly, I need a place to stay" caira muttered clutching onto the throw pillow.

"It's fine, you can stay at my place if you don't mind" Mikel said without hesitation while Caira

nodded in agreement.

The call came again, but this time, she just had to take the call. She sniffed and cleared her throats as she picked up the call

"Hello baby, where are you and why aren't you replying to my texts" her mom asked worriedly.

"I'm fine, I'm at a friend's place. sorry, I won't be able to come today, I and Amanda might be spending the weekend at his place" caira said, straining to sound fine.

"You should have told me earlier, you got me worried, what about Amanda" her mom asked

"She's also with me, but she's fast asleep already" caira lied.

"Okay dear, but who are you staying with tonight and what's your relationship with the person" caira's mom asked

"He's my boss and he stays at cooperstown" caira



answered

"Really, the same boss who dropped you off the other day? Is there anything going on between you two?" Her mom asked.

"Mom, he's just a friend, I'm really exhausted now" caira said

"Fine, I'll leave you to rest, good night sweetie" Her mom said

"You to, Good night Mom" Caira said as she ended the call. She heaved a sigh of relief immediately she ended the call, she only hope her mom doesn't find out. Silence stepped in as soon as caira ended the call, but Mikel broke the silence.

"Why are you avoiding my questions" Mikel asked with a Stern look.

"What question?" Caira asked in pretense.

"How much ransom does he want" Mikel asked again while caira got dumbfounded for a while.

"Why do you care to know" caira asked with a sniff.

"Because it's my responsibility to know. Amanda is also my child and crying all night wouldn't help" Mikel said.

"I don't want your help, Amanda is my daughter and I'll pay the ransom alone" caira replied

"Caira, you don't always have to be.....

"Enough!, I need to get some sleep" caira interrupted as rested her head on Mikel's couch.

"Fine, what would you like to have for dinner?" Mikel asked with a sigh

"Nothing, I just want to be alone" caira said as more tears came rolling down her cheeks. If only Mikel knew, if only he knew that she wasn't only crying for her daughter's life, but also his life. How would she manage to kill him?, she can't tell the cops because Noah threatened to kill her daughter if she let anyone know about it, she was about to

make the most difficult decision in her life. No matter how much he had hurt her in the past, she still love him dearly and can't bear to harm him, Noah's mission was to ensure that there is no one left in her life that she care about, he was gradually destroying her happiness.

She sat on the couch contemplating for a long while, she wasn't sleepy at all, definitely not when her daughter was in the hands of a monster. She was still deep in thoughts when she felt someone taping on her shoulder softly, it was Mikel.

"You need to get some sleep now, I'll take you to your room" Mikel said, but caira declined.

"I'm not sleepy" caira muttered tiredly. Mikel walked back into the kitchen and appeared in the sitting room with a cup of coffee.

"This will help you stay awake for as long as you like" Mikel said as he handed over the cup of coffee to her.

"Thank you" she muttered as she collected the cup of coffee. But not long after she finished drinking the coffee, she felt really dizzy and sleepy. It seemed Mikel added something in the coffee.

"Did..did you add anything to my coffee" caira stuttered drowsily

"Good night" Mikel said as he held her up in his arms and carried her to her bedroom, he placed a kiss on her lips and covered her with a duvet to ensure she doesn't catch a cold. Whrn he was done, He turned off the room lights and left the.

The\_Next\_Morning.

The next day,Mikel woke up to a delicious aroma coming from the kitchen. he stood up and walked to the kitchen anxiously, as soon as he got to the kitchen, he met caira making breakfast. this really got him perplexed because her daughter was kidnapped the previous day, and he never expected her to be up so early and even be found

making breakfast in the kitchen. Mikel stood at the door for a while, she also seemed to notice his presence, so she turned around and greeted.

"Good morning, breakfast is almost ready" Caira said with a dull look.

"how are you feeling" Mikel asked as he advanced towards her.

"I'm good" caira replied with a faux smile while Mikel stared at her in astonishment.

"Caira, what.....

"If it's about Amanda, don't bother, she'll be out soon" Caira cut in

"Anyways, breakfast is served, come eat up, you wouldn't want it to get cold" Caira said as she walked to the dinning room with a tray of pasta and salad.

"Thank you" Mikel muttered hesitantly as he sat down. They both ate in silence for a long time,

despite all caira's efforts to hide her bitterness, Mikel could still tell that she was still thinking about her daughter, because she was lost in thoughts and wasn't eating up.

"You haven't touched your food" Mikel said as he observed her closely, but there was no response.

"Caira?" Mikel called out again.

"Yes..I'm all ears" Caira said as she jolted out of her thoughts.

"What are you thinking about?" Mikel asked concerned.

"Nothing" Caira mumbled twisting her pasta around her fork unconsciously.

"I've contacted my private investigators, they'll find her soon" Mikel said while Caira stared at him in bemusement.

"I thought I asked you to stay out of it, Amanda is my daughter and....

"And also my daughter. Why won't you let me help out, what plans do you have exactly?" Mikel interrupted while Caira went silent for a while, she stood up and headed towards her room when she wasn't able to answer him.

As soon as Caira got into her room, she shoved her head on her pillow and cried silently. There was actually nothing wrong with Mikel helping her find her daughter, but what if Noah finds out that she involved a third party after all his warnings and threats. Mikel has been so nice to her and he's the father of her child, she also love him and don't want to hurt him, but her daughter's life was in danger and assassinating Mikel was the only way she'd be able to save her daughter, how do she tell him that she is presently planning on killing him in exchange for her daughter?

After much consideration, she walked into the bathroom and had a quick bath, she picked up a

white short towel before inserting a kitchen knife into her towel. she had a final look at her self on the mirror and heading towards Mikel's room. When she arrived at his door, she knocked once and his calm voice was heard ushering her in.

When she walked in, her eyes caught with his bared chest and wet hair, a white towel was also tied around his waist. His appearance showed clearly that he just left the shower. His wet lips sparkled, making it attractive for a kiss. Mikel also stared at her lustfully for a while before speaking up.

"Sorry, I.. I'll get you some clothes at the mall today, but you can put this on for now" Mikel said as he handed over one of his shirt to her.

"This is not why I'm here, although I have nothing to wear, so thank you" Caira muttered as she collected the shirt

"I would like us to talk about something" Caira



said

"Okay, what is it about" Mikel asked as he sat on his bed and picked up his lotion.

"I'll help you out" Caira said as she offered to help him apply the lotion on his back while Mikel handed it over to her.

"What will you do if you find yourself in a Delimma of choosing between two things you love the most" Caira asked as she applied some lotion on his back, giving it a slow massage.

"Well, I'll choose that which I love the most" Mikel answered as he shut his eyes in comfort with caira's hands brushing through his shoulders tenderly.

"What if you love them equally" Caira asked as she deeped one of hand into her towel, bringing out the knife

"That's a very tricky question, why do you ask?"

Mikel asked.

"Well, it's just a riddle" Caira said as she lifted up the knife with both hands and aimed for his neck.

TBC

My Better half

Highschool crush

Authoress Prudence

Episode 49

Caira screamed out and tried making her way into the building, but the fire men got hold of her.

"Miss, you can't go in there, we already lost two men" one of the fire men said as he got hold of her.

"My baby is in there, let me go" caira yelled out as she tried pulling out of their arms, but their grip around her was just too tight, Mikel who saw what happened, walked to her immediately.

"What's the problem" Mikel asked

"Amanda is in there" caira cried out, and without hesitation, Mikel ran into the burning building.

"Young Man, there is no one in there, everything is completely burnt down" one of the fire men said but Mikel turned deaf ears to his warnings.

As soon as he got inside the burning building, the place was smoky and hot so he had to cover his face with his right hand. The entire building was gradually consuming by the fire, he wasn't sure if there would be any living soul left. He called out Amanda's name and searched every hooks and crannies of the building, but there was no trace of her. The fire was gradually eating deep into his skin, but he couldn't leave the building without his child. burning woods and hot metals began falling from the ceiling as the fire got intensified, he was about leaving the 3rd floor when he saw a big sack bag in a cage, he moved quickly to the sack bag only to discover that there was someone inside of

it, he attempted unlocking the cage but it was locked, he needed to break the cage before the fire gets there. He scoured his eyes around the smoky room in search of a weapon, but all he found was a hot metal. Without hesitation, he pulled the metal regardless of how hot it was and used it to break the cage, as soon as the cage was broken, he pulled out the sack and brought the child out, she appeared to be do weak, she could barely see and was already choking as a result of the smoke, so Mikel took of his shirt, using it to cover her face as he carried her out, he managed to walk all the way down to the first floor, despite the bruises and injuries he sustained from the fire.

As soon as he got outside the building with Amanda, he met the fire men who was still trying to put off the fire outside of the building, the fire men who held caira, let go of her as soon as they sighted Mikel walking out with her child.

"Oh my goodness, Amanda!!!" Caira yelled out as she quickly collected her daughter from Mikel.

"We need to take her to the hospital now" Mikel said walking to his car while caira followed behind him with her daughter. Everyone was stunned as they watched the whole scenery till their departure.

2\_days\_later

Caira walked into Mikel's room and knocked on his door before entering, upon walking into his room, she met him on his bed as usual, that has been his condition ever since the fire incidence. He sustained a lot of injuries and she couldn't help but feel guilty about his misfortune.

"Hi..I've come to give you a massage" caira said as she walked in with a bowl of water and a soft towel.

"Sure" Mikel muttered as he managed to sit up.

Caira squatted down while Mikel sat on the bed, she started by loosing the bandage on his shoulder.

Upon loosing it, she saw the scar on his shoulder, it was really pathetic. She felt so sorry that he had to go through such pain because of her. He had injuries on his shoulder and on both palms. it's been two days since they returned from the hospital and Amanda was doing fine, but she can't just leave him injured, she still had to stay back with him and give him some massage until his wounds were healed, that was the best she could do for him.

"Ouch... careful" Mikel winced in pain, jolting caira out of her thoughts.

"Oh, I'm sorry" caira muttered, dabbing his shoulder painstakingly.

She placed the the towel into the hot water and squeezed it. As she dabbed his wounds, she could feel his eyes dangling on her face. after a while, she looked up slowly to see if he was still staring at her, but their eyes met, so she quickly looked down

and continued what she was doing. Mikel noticed that his stares was making her uncomfortable, so he smiled and looked away. When she was done, she applied the medicine on his wounds and wrapped it back.

"Thank you" Mikel said while caira sat beside him on the bed

"It's nothing, this is the best I can do to repay you" caira said

"Repay me for what exactly? For saving my daughter?" Mikel asked while caura stared down and fiddled with her fingers.

"Uhhh.... I'm sorry I tried to kill you, I was just confused and.....

Caira was still speaking when Mikel shut her up with a kiss on her lips, he moved his injured hands around her waist and made her sit on his laps, caira attempted leaving him, knowing fully well

that he was injured, but he held her closely to himself. Suddenly they heard the door go open, revealing little Amanda's face.

"Sorry mummy and daddy!!" Amanda said with a chuckle as she turned around and closed her eyes with her chocolate cup.

"Oh my goodness" caira gasped as she also chuckled.

"Can I look now" Amanda said still covering her eyes.

"Go out baby, I'll come see you" caira said.

"Come here Amanda" Mikel objected while caira hit him playfully on his arm, and apologized when she remembered that he was injured.

Amanda ran to Mikel and threw herself on him while caira pulled her away.

"Careful darling, your daddy is injured" caira said as she separated Amanda from her father.



"Sorry Daddy, my chocolate got finished" Amanda said licking up her spoon.

"Alright sweetie, I'll get you more today" Mikel said while caira objected.

"No, that's enough, no more chocolate for you again Mandy, you've taken too much sugar already. Go back to your room now." caira scolded while Amanda pouted and ran out in tears.

"Caira that was harsh, why did you do that" Mikel asked.

"What do you know about a child's health? She's taken too much sugar already and it's bad for her health" caira said with a shrug.

"Sorry Doc " Mikel muttered playfully while caira rolled her eyes

"By the way, how is Dianna doing" caira asked

"She's fine, she missed you a lot" Mikel said.

"Well, I really let her down, I promised I would come back but I never did" caira said

"Yeah, just the same way you left me" Mikel stated while caira froze for a moment.

"Take care of yourself" caira muttered after a long silence as she stood up and left while Mikel followed behind her.

"Mandy, let's go back home" caira said while her daughter picked up her cup and followed trailed behind her mother slowly.

"Mummy why are we going home, I want to stay with daddy" her daughter whined but caira ignored her.

"C'mon caira, don't leave, I'm sorry if a said anything provoking" Mikel pleaded as he held her right hand.

"You didn't say anything wrong, my mum has been calling and I think it's high time we go home before

she declare us missing" caira said with a faux smile, but Mikel wasn't convinced.

"I'm still injured, who's going to help me....

Mikel got interrupted when they heard a knock on the door. the door opened immediately and Zack was seen walking in. Zack's eyebrows raised in surprise as soon as he saw caira.

"Oh my goodness, Zack!!" Caira called in excitement as they both hugged.

"It's so good to see you again caira" Zack said as they disengaged.

Zack sighted Amanda, so he squatted to her level and got hold of her hands.

"That's my baby" caira said proudly.

"What a adorable girl you've got here caira, what's the name cutie" Zack asked her with a warm smile.

"Her name is Amanda, sorry she don't like

strangers" Mikel added.

"Nice to meet you Amanda" Zack said as he held her tiny hands.

"Thank you mister" Amanda said while Zack held her up in his arm.

"We do have a lot of things to talk about caira" Zack said as he sat down on Mikel's couch.

"I thought you were here to take care of your friend" caira said as she also sat down beside Mikel.

"Well, that was why I came, I actually thought he'd be dead before I arrive, but turns out you've been here for him" Zack said hilariously while caira laughed out.

They talked for a very long time until it was late, so Zack volunteered to drop caira off at home since Mikel was injured. Zack turned off his engine as soon as he arrived at caira's apartment.

"Thank you Zack, please take care of Mikel and call

me if he need me" caira stated.

"No problem, but I've been willing to ask why you left Mikel, I mean....you guys were doing fine before.....

"I never left him, he did" caira interrupted.

"C'mon, Mikel loves you so much and in the past six years, he's been drinking and taking hard drugs, but he still couldn't get over you. Good thing you're here now, because he was getting out of control" Zack said but caira couldn't give him an answer.

"I think I'm crossing my limits, I'm sorry if you don't wanna talk about this" Zack apologized when he discovered that she wasn't comfortable with the discussion.

"It's ok Zack, please take care of Mikel, I'll come see him whenever I'm less busy" caira said as she stepped out of his car with Amanda who was

already asleep.

Few\_weeks\_later

Caira opened the door silently as she sneaked in, ensuring that it doesn't make any sound, she tip-toed directly to the sitting room but couldn't find him there, she moved forward to his bedroom and opened his door slightly but there was no trace of him, so she proceeded to the gym, there she found him doing some work out. Her suspicions were right after all, Mikel is perfectly fine but he's been using her, he's been lying to her and using his injuries as an avenue to have her at his house every day.

"Wow, it seems someone is perfectly fine now" caira muttered with a smirk as she walked into his gym. Mikel dropped down the dumbbell he was lifting as soon as he saw her walk in.

"You didn't tell me you were coming" Mikel muttered in surprise

"Well, i just decided to come check up on you since you're \*injured\*" caira said placing more emphasis on INJURED

"I'm still injured, I just....."

"Mikel, from the look of things, I think you're much better now. There's no point in lying to me and making me run over to your house just to give you a massage when your injuries are already heald, do you know how worried I feel whenever you call me?" Caira said looking quite upset.

"Alright, I'm sorry, I only wanted your company, and I guess this is the only opportunity I can use to lure you to my place" Mikel said as he held her waist and led her to the dinning room.

"Well, if you wanted my company, you should've told me, I don't have a problem coming to see you" caira said as she sat on the dinning chair.

"Sorry my lady" Mikel said walking towards the

kitchen. Shortly, he was seen coming out with a tray on his hands.

"Here you go" Mikel said as he placed the tray on the table. Caira stared at the food for long time as her lips curved in a smile.

"You made this food yourself?" Caira asked while Mikel nodded.

"It looks nice" caira commented.

"Yes, and it also taste as good as it looks" Mikel added as he picked up his spoon and set to eat, Caira did the same as she also picked up her spoon.

As soon as she tasted it, her face twitched in a frown, the food wasn't as good as it appeared, it was too spicy. She stared at Mikel but he seemed to be enjoying his meal, so she just had to play along. when she couldn't take it any longer, she just had to let out her feelings.

"Oh my goodness, water!!!" Caira said while Mikel



passed a bottle of water to her quickly.

"It's something wrong with the food?" Mikel asked.

"Yes, it's so spicy, sorry!!" caira said laughing out while Mikel smiled. Silence stepped in immediately as Mikel also pushed his food away.

"Caira we've been together for a long time, right from when we were teenagers. I don't want to waste anymore time, I want to make my intentions clear to you, you've become a very big part of me and I wouldn't want to let go" Mikel said breaking the silence.

"Mikel can we talk about this some other time? I'm in a good mood today and I wouldn't.....

"Let's talk about it now, I know you dropped out of highschool because of my mistake, but I'm sorry, and I'm still asking for a chance to make amends, is that to much to ask for?" Mikel said as he held her hands.

"It's not Mikel, all i ever wanted to hear is an excuse and apology. I want to know why you left me and Amanda at the hospital and I also want to know if your text was a prank. Even if it was not a prank, just give me any excuse. you can tell me it was a dare, or you were drunk while typing and promise me it wouldn't happen again. That is all I ever wanted to hear you say, but you kept asking me why I left and asking for another chance without apologizing for your previous mistakes, making it look like I left you with no good reason. I know others might call me stupid and gullible for forgiving you, but I don't care, I just want you to apologize and assure me that it wouldn't happen again. I hold no grudge against you, I only want to hear you say "I'M SORRY ABOUT THE TEXT" Is that too much to ask for?" Caira said at the top of her voice.

"What message are you talking about?" Mikel asked in confusion.

TBC

My better half

Highschool crush

By authoress Prudence

Episode 50

"What text are you talking about" Mikel asked in confusion

"I called you that night when I was in labor, but you kept rejecting my calls, I assumed you were already asleep, so I decided to let you be, but few minutes later, i received a text from you. You said I and my bastard child could go to hell for all you care. At first, I thought it was a joke, so I foolishly waited on you, I lost a lot of blood during delivery and I needed some money for blood transfusion, I almost died Mikel, I went through a lot of complications alone!!!. If not for the senior nurse who paid for my bills and hosted me and my mum,

I would probably have died because of you. After my delivery, I told the nurse everything, including my plans to go far away from you, she supported me, she felt really sorry for me, so she hosted us in her apartment for a week before helping us relocate to New York. She accepted to help in making up fake news about my death despite it was against the hospital policies. she sacrificed a lot for me, but all you could do is fire her, seriously? Why did you make her lose her job?. I'm sure she hates me right now and her greatest regret will be helping me out!!" Caira said in tears while Mikel stood gobsmacked.

"I don't know what you're talking about caira, I never texted you. You never called me when you were in labor" Mikel justified but caira was still not convinced.

"Don't you lie to me, just admit it and say you're sorry, I really want us to move on!!" Caira pleaded

with a sniff.

"Caira, you know I can't say a thing like that, "  
Mikel asked

"I'm no fool Mikel, I might not have any evidence because I got rid of my phone and everything that has to do with me, but you.....

"Caira, listen to me, I never did that, I knew I fired the nurse because she couldn't provide your corpse after she claimed that you were dead, but I never text you, someone else could have done that but I swear I didn't" Mikel said as he placed his both hands on her shoulder.

"I'm sorry, but I don't know what to believe. The nurse also told me that you sent your secretary to bring my baby to you, but I refused...

"I never asked Zoey to get your child, I had no idea you were at the hospital, how did Zoey find out that you were at the hospital?" Mikel asked while

caira froze for a moment

"You mean you never asked her to bring the child?" Caira asked as her eyes glinted in shock. Zoey actually came that same evening after her delivery, she introduced herself as Mikel's secretary and informed the nurse that the baby belongs to her boss. She told the nurse that her boss wanted to see his child, but he was too busy to come over himself, so he sent her. When the senior nurse refused to hand over the baby to her, she threatened to involve the higher authorities if she doesn't provide the child, it really took them a lot of effort before they could ask her out of the hospital. Could it be that Zoey was behind everything?

"I think Zoey is behind all these, please believe me" Mikel said

"Maybe we forget about the past and move on" caira said, not quite sure if that was what she really

wanted. Though, she wasn't convinced. But holding grudges against him won't solve anything, she would only end up hurting her self if she keeps thinking about the past.

Few\_Weeks\_Later.

Caira walked into the the restaurant with a beautiful short red gown which exposed the physic of of curvy body, she had her hair styled in a cute wave, she appeared more enchanting with her light makeup and sparkling red lipstick. it was actually her first time going on an official date with Mikel. she checked her phone again to be sure she was at the right venue, and yes, it was Le bernardin, one if the biggest restaurant in New York City.

Upon walking into the restaurant, she met a host standing by the door with a wait list on his hands.

"Good evening Miss, you are welcomed to less bernardin. who would you like to see" the host asked nicely

"Uhhh.. Mikel Camford" caira responded

"Are you caira Hudson?" The attendant asked reading through his wait-list

'Yes I am" caira responded.

"Please!" the man said as he led her to Mikel's table. As soon as Mikel sighted her coming, he stood up and pulled out a chair for her to sit.

"Hi" Mikel said as he stared at caira who was looking dazzling that night.

"Hello, what's the look about?" Caira asked feeling uncomfortable with his gaze on her.

"You look gorgeous" Mikel complimented without taking his eyes off her.

"Thank you" caira muttered as her cheeks heated up in a blush

Mikel ordered a plate of Chinese soup, grilled chicken and a bottle of wine, while they both both



eat and chatted. Caira took up her glass of wine and drank again, her glass was almost empty when she saw Mikel went down on his knees and brought out a small box which he opened and brought out a tiny gold ring.

"Caira, I know my life will never be complete without you beside me to share it, I've always dreamt of doing this and making you part of me. I promise you, no one will ever work harder to make you happy or cherish you more than me. I love you, please marry me" Mikel said while caira stared at him in shock, not knowing exactly what to say.

"Yes!., yes, I will!!!" Caira said excitedly as she finally found her voice. mikel inserted the ring in her finger carefully and stood on his feet before planting a kiss on her lips. Suddenly, she saw a group of people who walked out applauding, she got gobsmacked when she saw her mom, her daughter and Zack amidst the crew.

"Mom?" Caira called out in shock.

"Oh dear, I'm so happy for you" her mom muttered as she hugged her daughter who was still in shock.

"Mom, how.. did you find..."

"Honey, I know everything, Mikel is Amanda's dad, why were you hiding this from me, I'm your mother" her mom interrupted

"Since when did you find out?" Caira asked.

"Well, right from the beginning, Mikel told me about it, he said he was ready to take full responsibility, remember the first day he came visiting?" Her mom asked

"Yes?" caira responded

Well, that day, he told me about everything and also promised to take full responsibility. At first, I was really mad, but I was glad he told me and accepted to take up his responsibilities. I'm so sorry you have to move away from Seoul after your

delivery, it was all my fault, I thought you decided to leave Seoul because of the bad impression and news people spread about you, I never knew you were actually trying to go far away from him, I wouldn't have let that happen. I wanted to tell you that I was aware of your relationship with him, but I feared that might cause a big misunderstanding between you two, so I decided to keep it to my self since you said it wasn't necessary for me to know" her mom explained.

"Mom I'm sorry, I was just a depressed teenage girl who wanted nothing more than to be alone" caira mumbled as she hugged her mother once more. She actually did underestimated Mikel, he was more responsible than she thought. The rest of the night was fun, it was the best and was a memorable day for everyone as they all celebrated the engagement of the young couples-to-be.

Few\_Months\_Later

Caira shut her eyes in pleasure and grasped mikel's hair as he ate deep into the hollows of her neck and fondle with her nipples, he moved his hand underneath her thighs until his fingers got into her pussy, caira moaned lightly as she felt his finger inside of her, this got her really wet as she spread her legs widely, accommodating every bit of him.

After a while, Mikel left her lips and moved in between her, making caira uncomfortable.

"What are you doing?" Caira asked with a gasp, but Mikel plunged his tongue inside her wet hole, his warm breath was replaced by his warm wet tongue, she could feel his fingers brushing along her inner thighs, her body quivered and she arched her back to feel the palm of his hand push against her clit. She threw her head back as the softest moan escaped her lips while Mikel smirked, knowing how badly she was trying to control her self. He ate deep into her from bottom to top, his

tongue stopping to circle her clit, while caira spread her legs wider to invite him in completely, to open her self to whatever new pleasure he wanted to give her. The pleasure caira felt was just too much for her to handle as she badly wanted him inside of her, it was something she's never felt before, not even Noah had been able to drive her into another realm of pleasure.

"Babe..what are ..you do-ing!!" Caira screamed out in ecstasy as she felt his tongue hitting against her clit which was now red and sore. This happened for a while, but when the pleasure was just too much for her to handle, she squirt and ejaculated at the same time on Mikel's face. She sat up immediately, covering her self in shame.

"Oops!! Sorry!" Caira muttered with a look of embarrassment as she picked up her shirt and attempted cleaning his face with it. But Mikel seemed not to be bothered by that, instead he

moved to her and attempted kissing her, he seemed not to have had enough of her, but caira resisted.

"Please can we stop here, I can't take it anymore" caira said as she moved back while Mikel smirked.

"Alright, let me get you washed up" Mikel said as he carried her up in his arms and took her to the bathroom where they both had a bath together.

Few minutes later, Mikel brought her out of the bathroom and laid her on the bed.

Caira laid on the bed with Mikel behind her, they were both covered in a thick duvet as he pulled her very close to himself while she enjoyed the warmth of his body. He brought out his phone and placed it in front of her and began flipping through his gallery slowly, bringing back old memories of the past.

"Oh my gosh, don't tell me you still have this photo!"

This was 6 years back" caira exclaimed as she collected the phone and stared at the picture with a smile on her face.

"Yeah, at the KFC shop at Seoul" Mikel whispered giving her a warm cuddle underneath the duvet.

'Remember when we first met at the \*glamorous unisex stall\*?" Mikel asked

"Yes, I can never forget that day, I almost blew off your brain that day" caira bragged

"Why?" Mikel asked.

"Because you took away my dress and banned me from shopping there" caira said while Mikel laughed as he suddenly remembered what he did.

"Jerk!!" Caira said as she attempted leaving the bed but Mikel pulled her back.

"Well, I wasn't really interested in the dress, but I was interested in you. The first day I saw you, I developed a strange interest in you, I wanted to

talk to you or make you talk to me, but I wasn't found of asking a girl out or telling her that I was interested in her, so I just had to make you talk to me by all means" Mikel stated with his Left hand hanging across her waist.

"I get it, you were too proud to talk to me" caira said as she moved his warm palm and placed it on the side of her breast.

"I just wasn't used to talking to someone I just met. At that time of my life, I discovered that making you upset and bullying you was the only thing that could make you talk to me, So I had to play along. By the way, your Ex who kidnapped Amanda has been arrested by the cops, and he's presently in Jail, would you like to see him?" Mikel asked stroking her hair gently

"No, I'm glad he has been arrested, he can rot in jail for all I care" caira replied feeling a bit upset when she remembered what Noah made Mikel go



through.

Caira was about saying something else when Mikel's phone suddenly rang out. Mikel slowly sat up and reached out for his phone, he sighed in relief when he discovered that it was his mom.

"Hello mum, I was just about calling you" Mikel said in a low tone.

"Son, how have you been doing and how is New York?" His mother asked

I'm fine mom, I'll like to see you, but I'm not coming alone, I'll be coming with someone you'll like to see" Mikel announced

"Who is that?" his mom asked

"Well, she's someone you've missed a lot, you'll find out once we arrive" Mikel added.

"Okay son, I would also like to see you, we've got something really important to talk about". His mom said

"Alright mom, I'll be there tomorrow" Mikel responded and ended the call. Mikel placed his phone on his drawer and joined caira on the bed

"The next day, they booked a flight to Seoul. As soon as they arrived at Incheon international airport, caira suddenly felt cold, she lived most of her life in Seoul and considered it as her hometown, but strangely, she wasn't so excited about coming home. Although, she did have moments of anticipation, seeing the old streets, shops, familiar faces and the ballet class which still stood firm and was looking as beautiful as it was 6years ago. After a long drive they finally arrived at the Camford's mansion, the driver honed and the big gate opened up while they drove in.

Upon driving into the parking lot, Caira saw madam Caroline, Dianna and some other maids who has probably been waiting on their arrival. Mikel held her hand as they both stepped out of

the car together. As soon as Dianna saw Caira, she flug up in joy as she ran her and hugged her tightly.

"Caira, I missed you, where have you been all these years?" Dianna said as they disengaged.

"I missed you to, sorry I wasn't able to come back, I'll explain later" caira said while madam Caroline also walked to her.

"Caira dear, we missed you" Madam Caroline said as she hugged her.

"I missed you all to ma'am, it's so nice to finally see you again" caira said as she beemed a smile.

Madam Caroline was about saying something else when Mikel interrupted.

"I get it, it seems I'm now too invisible for anyone to notice" Mikel said playfully.

"Oh dear, we also missed you, but we've been worried about Caira, I prepared dinner, why don't we go in?" madam Caroline said ushering them in

while Dianna and the maids helped them with their luggages. When they got into the sitting room, they spent a lot of time together, it wasn't as bad as caira thought it'll be, she felt welcomed and relaxed until Mikel brought up a certain conversation.

"I brought caira here today, to inform you about our marriage plans" Mikel announced as he held her hands.

"What marriage plans?" Madam Caroline asked in confusion.

"Well, I and caira are engaged. She already has a child for me, sorry I wanted to tell you earlier" Mikel announced While his mom's smiling face suddenly curved into a frown, but she tried as much as possible not to make it visible.

"Uhhh... Mikel, can I see you for a moment?" Madam Caroline asked as she stood up and left for her room while Mikel followed behind her

anxiously. As soon they were both in the bedroom, madam Caroline shut the door to ensure that no one heard their conversation.

"Mikel, what was that about?" Madam Caroline asked upon facing Mikel

"What are you talking about?" Mikel asked.

"How can you have a child with caira, and as if that wasn't enough damages, you decided to get married to her!!?" Madam Caroline asked almost in a whisper.

"And what's wrong with me getting married to the person I love?" Mikel asked already pissed.

"You can't get married to Caira!!" His mum said.

"Why?" Mikel asked

"Mikel, I'm sorry but you two can't get married" madam Caroline said

"Well, if you have nothing important to say, then

I'm sorry but I'll have to exempt you from the marriage plans, I don't need your approval" Mikel said in anger and was about leaving when his mother spoke out.

"What about Naomi?" His mother asked while Mikel froze instantly.

My better half 50

"What text are you talking about" Mikel asked in confusion

"I called you that night when I was in labor, but you kept rejecting my calls, I assumed you were already asleep, so I decided to let you be, but few minutes later, i received a text from you. You said I and my bastard child could go to hell for all you care. At first, I thought it was a joke, so I foolishly waited on you, I lost a lot of blood during delivery and I needed some money for blood transfusion, I almost died Mikel, I went through a lot of complications alone!!!. If not for the senior nurse

who paid for my bills and hosted me and my mum, I would probably have died because of you. After my delivery, I told the nurse everything, including my plans to go far away from you, she supported me, she felt really sorry for me, so she hosted us in her apartment for a week before helping us relocate to New York. She accepted to help in making up fake news about my death despite it was against the hospital policies. she sacrificed a lot for me, but all you could do is fire her, seriously? Why did you make her lose her job?. I'm sure she hates me right now and her greatest regret will be helping me out!!" Caira said in tears while Mikel stood gobsmacked.

"I don't know what you're talking about caira, I never texted you. You never called me when you were in labor" Mikel justified but caira was still not convinced.

"Don't you lie to me, just admit it and say you're

sorry, I really want us to move on!!" Caira pleaded with a sniff.

"Caira, you know I can't say a thing like that, " Mikel asked

"I'm no fool Mikel, I might not have any evidence because I got rid of my phone and everything that has to do with me, but you.....

"Caira, listen to me, I never did that, I knew I fired the nurse because she couldn't provide your corpse after she claimed that you were dead, but I never text you, someone else could have done that but I swear I didn't" Mikel said as he placed his both hands on her shoulder.

"I'm sorry, but I don't know what to believe. The nurse also told me that you sent your secretary to bring my baby to you, but I refused...

"I never asked Zoey to get your child, I had no idea you were at the hospital, how did Zoey find out



that you were at the hospital?" Mikel asked while Caira froze for a moment

"You mean you never asked her to bring the child?" Caira asked as her eyes glinted in shock. Zoey actually came that same evening after her delivery, she introduced herself as Mikel's secretary and informed the nurse that the baby belongs to her boss. She told the nurse that her boss wanted to see his child, but he was too busy to come over himself, so he sent her. When the senior nurse refused to hand over the baby to her, she threatened to involve the higher authorities if she doesn't provide the child, it really took them a lot of effort before they could ask her out of the hospital. Could it be that Zoey was behind everything?

"I think Zoey is behind all these, please believe me" Mikel said

"Maybe we forget about the past and move on"

caira said, not quite sure if that was what she really wanted. Though, she wasn't convinced. But holding grudges against him won't solve anything, she would only end up hurting her self if she keeps thinking about the past.

Few\_Weeks\_Later.

Caira walked into the the restaurant with a beautiful short red gown which exposed the physic of of curvy body, she had her hair styled in a cute wave, she appeared more enchanting with her light makeup and sparkling red lipstick. it was actually her first time going on an official date with Mikel. she checked her phone again to be sure she was at the right venue, and yes, it was Le bernardin, one if the biggest restaurant in New York City.

Upon walking into the restaurant, she met a host standing by the door with a wait list on his hands.

"Good evening Miss, you are welcomed to less bernardin. who would you like to see" the host

asked nicely

"Uhhh.. Mikel Camford" caira responded

"Are you caira Hudson?" The attendant asked reading through his wait-list

'Yes I am" caira responded.

"Please!" the man said as he led her to Mikel's table. As soon as Mikel sighted her coming, he stood up and pulled out a chair for her to sit.

"Hi" Mikel said as he stared at caira who was looking dazzling that night.

"Hello, what's the look about?" Caira asked feeling uncomfortable with his gaze on her.

"You look gorgeous" Mikel complimented without taking his eyes off her.

"Thank you" caira muttered as her cheeks heated up in a blush

Mikel ordered a plate of Chinese soup, grilled

chicken and a bottle of wine, while they both both eat and chatted. Caira took up her glass of wine and drank again, her glass was almost empty when she saw Mikel went down on his knees and brought out a small box which he opened and brought out a tiny gold ring.

"Caira, I know my life will never be complete without you beside me to share it, I've always dreamt of doing this and making you part of me. I promise you, no one will ever work harder to make you happy or cherish you more than me. I love you, please marry me" Mikel said while caira stared at him in shock, not knowing exactly what to say.

"Yes!., yes, I will!!!" Caira said excitedly as she finally found her voice. mikel inserted the ring in her finger carefully and stood on his feet before planting a kiss on her lips. Suddenly, she saw a group of people who walked out applauding, she got gobsmacked when she saw her mom, her

daughter and Zack amidst the crew.

"Mom?" Caira called out in shock.

"Oh dear, I'm so happy for you" her mom muttered as she hugged her daughter who was still in shock.

"Mom, how.. did you find..."

"Honey, I know everything, Mikel is Amanda's dad, why were you hiding this from me, I'm your mother" her mom interrupted

"Since when did you find out?" Caira asked.

"Well, right from the beginning, Mikel told me about it, he said he was ready to take full responsibility, remember the first day he came visiting?" Her mom asked

"Yes?" caira responded

Well, that day, he told me about everything and also promised to take full responsibility. At first, I was really mad, but I was glad he told me and

accepted to take up his responsibilities. I'm so sorry you have to move away from Seoul after your delivery, it was all my fault, I thought you decided to leave Seoul because of the bad impression and news people spread about you, I never knew you were actually trying to go far away from him, I wouldn't have let that happen. I wanted to tell you that I was aware of your relationship with him, but I feared that might cause a big misunderstanding between you two, so I decided to keep it to my self since you said it wasn't necessary for me to know" her mom explained.

"Mom I'm sorry, I was just a depressed teenage girl who wanted nothing more than to be alone" caira mumbled as she hugged her mother once more. She actually did underestimated Mikel, he was more responsible than she thought. The rest of the night was fun, it was the best and was a memorable day for everyone as they all celebrated the engagement of the young couples-to-be.

## Few\_Months\_Later

Caira shut her eyes in pleasure and grasped mikel's hair as he ate deep into the hollows of her neck and fondle with her nipples, he moved his hand underneath her thighs until his fingers got into her pussy, caira moaned lightly as she felt his finger inside of her, this got her really wet as she spread her legs widely, accommodating every bit of him.

After a while, Mikel left her lips and moved in between her, making caira uncomfortable.

"What are you doing?" Caira asked with a gasp, but Mikel plunged his tongue inside her wet hole, his warm breath was replaced by his warm wet tongue, she could feel his fingers brushing along her inner thighs, her body quivered and she arched her back to feel the palm of his hand push against her clit. She threw her head back as the softest moan escaped her lips while Mikel smirked, knowing how badly she was trying to control her

self. He ate deep into her from bottom to top, his tongue stopping to circle her clit, while caira spread her legs wider to invite him in completely, to open her self to whatever new pleasure he wanted to give her. The pleasure caira felt was just too much for her to handle as she badly wanted him inside of her, it was something she's never felt before, not even Noah had been able to drive her into another realm of pleasure.

"Babe..what are ..you do-ing!!" Caira screamed out in ecstasy as she felt his tongue hitting against her clit which was now red and sore. This happened for a while, but when the pleasure was just too much for her to handle, she squirt and ejaculated at the same time on Mikel's face. She sat up immediately, covering her self in shame.

"Oops!! Sorry!" Caira muttered with a look of embarrassment as she picked up her shirt and attempted cleaning his face with it. But Mikel



seemed not to be bothered by that, instead he moved to her and attempted kissing her, he seemed not to have had enough of her, but caira resisted.

"Please can we stop here, I can't take it anymore" caira said as she moved back while Mikel smirked.

"Alright, let me get you washed up" Mikel said as he carried her up in his arms and took her to the bathroom where they both had a bath together.

Few minutes later, Mikel brought her out of the bathroom and laid her on the bed.

Caira laid on the bed with Mikel behind her, they were both covered in a thick duvet as he pulled her very close to himself while she enjoyed the warmth of his body. He brought out his phone and placed it in front of her and began flipping through his gallery slowly, bringing back old memories of the past.

"Oh my gosh, don't tell me you still have this photo! This was 6 years back" caira exclaimed as she collected the phone and stared at the picture with a smile on her face.

"Yeah, at the KFC shop at Seoul" Mikel whispered giving her a warm cuddle underneath the duvet.

'Remember when we first met at the \*glamorous unisex stall\*?' Mikel asked

"Yes, I can never forget that day, I almost blew off your brain that day" caira bragged

"Why?" Mikel asked.

"Because you took away my dress and banned me from shopping there" caira said while Mikel laughed as he suddenly remembered what he did.

"Jerk!!" Caira said as she attempted leaving the bed but Mikel pulled her back.

"Well, I wasn't really interested in the dress, but I was Interested in you. The first day I saw you, I

developed a strange interest in you, I wanted to talk to you or make you talk to me, but I wasn't found of asking a girl out or telling her that I was interested in her, so I just had to make you talk to me by all means" Mikel stated with his Left hand hanging across her waist.

"I get it, you were too proud to talk to me" caira said as she moved his warm palm and placed it on the side of her breast.

"I just wasn't used to talking to someone I just met. At that time of my life, I discovered that making you upset and bullying you was the only thing that could make you talk to me, So I had to play along. By the way, your Ex who kidnapped Amanda has been arrested by the cops, and he's presently in Jail, would you like to see him?" Mikel asked stroking her hair gently

"No, I'm glad he has been arrested, he can rot in jail for all I care" caira replied feeling a bit upset

when she remembered what Noah made Mikel go through.

Caira was about saying something else when Mikel's phone suddenly rang out. Mikel slowly sat up and reached out for his phone, he sighed in relief when he discovered that it was his mom.

"Hello mum, I was just about calling you" Mikel said in a low tone.

"Son, how have you been doing and how is New York?" His mother asked

"I'm fine mom, I'll like to see you, but I'm not coming alone, I'll be coming with someone you'll like to see" Mikel announced

"Who is that?" his mom asked

"Well, she's someone you've missed a lot, you'll find out once we arrive" Mikel added.

"Okay son, I would also like to see you, we've got something really important to talk about". His

mom said

"Alright mom, I'll be there tomorrow" Mikel responded and ended the call. Mikel placed his phone on his drawer and joined caira on the bed

"The next day, they booked a flight to Seoul. As soon as they arrived at Incheon international airport, caira suddenly felt cold, she lived most of her life in Seoul and considered it as her hometown, but strangely, she wasn't so excited about coming home. Although, she did have moments of anticipation, seeing the old streets, shops, familiar faces and the ballet class which still stood firm and was looking as beautiful as it was 6years ago. After a long drive they finally arrived at the Camford's mansion, the driver horned and the big gate opened up while they drove in.

Upon driving into the parking lot, Caira saw madam Caroline, Dianna and some other maids who has probably been waiting on their arrival.

Mikel held her hand as they both stepped out of the car together. As soon as Dianna saw Caira, she flug up in joy as she ran her and hugged her tightly.

"Caira, I missed you, where have you been all these years?" Dianna said as they disengaged.

"I missed you to, sorry I wasn't able to come back, I'll explain later" caira said while madam Caroline also walked to her.

"Caira dear, we missed you" Madam Caroline said as she hugged her.

"I missed you all to ma'am, it's so nice to finally see you again" caira said as she beemed a smile.

Madam Caroline was about saying something else when Mikel interrupted.

"I get it, it seems I'm now too invisible for anyone to notice" Mikel said playfully.

"Oh dear, we also missed you, but we've been worried about Caira, I prepared dinner, why don't

we go in?" madam Caroline said ushering them in while Dianna and the maids helped them with their luggages. When they got into the sitting room, they spent a lot of time together, it wasn't as bad as caira thought it'll be, she felt welcomed and relaxed until Mikel brought up a certain conversation.

"I brought caira here today, to inform you about our marriage plans" Mikel announced as he held her hands.

"What marriage plans?" Madam Caroline asked in confusion.

"Well, I and caira are engaged. She already has a child for me, sorry I wanted to tell you earlier" Mikel announced While his mom's smiling face suddenly curved into a frown, but she tried as much as possible not to make it visible.

"Uhhh... Mikel, can I see you for a moment?" Madam Caroline asked as she stood up and left for

her room while Mikel followed behind her anxiously. As soon they were both in the bedroom, madam Caroline shut the door to ensure that no one heard their conversation.

"Mikel, what was that about?" Madam Caroline asked upon facing Mikel

"What are you talking about?" Mikel asked.

"How can you have a child with caira, and as if that wasn't enough damages, you decided to get married to her!!?" Madam Caroline asked almost in a whisper.

"And what's wrong with me getting married to the person I love?" Mikel asked already pissed.

"You can't get married to Caira!!" His mum said.

"Why?" Mikel asked

"Mikel, I'm sorry but you two can't get married" madam Caroline said



"Well, if you have nothing important to say, then I'm sorry but I'll have to exempt you from the marriage plans, I don't need your approval" Mikel said in anger and was about leaving when his mother spoke out.

"What about Naomi?" His mother asked while Mikel froze instantly.

My better half 50

"What text are you talking about" Mikel asked in confusion

"I called you that night when I was in labor, but you kept rejecting my calls, I assumed you were already asleep, so I decided to let you be, but few minutes later, I received a text from you. You said I and my bastard child could go to hell for all your care. At first, I thought it was a joke, so I foolishly waited on you, I lost a lot of blood during delivery and I needed some money for blood transfusion, I almost died Mikel, I went through a lot of

complications alone!!!. If not for the senior nurse who paid for my bills and hosted me and my mum, I would probably have died because of you. After my delivery, I told the nurse everything, including my plans to go far away from you, she supported me, she felt really sorry for me, so she hosted us in her apartment for a week before helping us relocate to New York. She accepted to help in making up fake news about my death despite it was against the hospital policies. she sacrificed a lot for me, but all you could do is fire her, seriously? Why did you make her lose her job?. I'm sure she hates me right now and her greatest regret will be helping me out!!" Caira said in tears while Mikel stood gobsmacked.

"I don't know what you're talking about caira, I never texted you. You never called me when you were in labor" Mikel justified but caira was still not convinced.

"Don't you lie to me, just admit it and say you're sorry, I really want us to move on!!" Caira pleaded with a sniff.

"Caira, you know I can't say a thing like that, " Mikel asked

"I'm no fool Mikel, I might not have any evidence because I got rid of my phone and everything that has to do with me, but you.....

"Caira, listen to me, I never did that, I knew I fired the nurse because she couldn't provide your corpse after she claimed that you were dead, but I never text you, someone else could have done that but I swear I didn't" Mikel said as he placed his both hands on her shoulder.

"I'm sorry, but I don't know what to believe. The nurse also told me that you sent your secretary to bring my baby to you, but I refused...

"I never asked Zoey to get your child, I had no idea

you were at the hospital, how did Zoey find out that you were at the hospital?" Mikel asked while Caira froze for a moment

"You mean you never asked her to bring the child?" Caira asked as her eyes glinted in shock. Zoey actually came that same evening after her delivery, she introduced herself as Mikel's secretary and informed the nurse that the baby belongs to her boss. She told the nurse that her boss wanted to see his child, but he was too busy to come over himself, so he sent her. When the senior nurse refused to hand over the baby to her, she threatened to involve the higher authorities if she doesn't provide the child, it really took them a lot of effort before they could ask her out of the hospital. Could it be that Zoey was behind everything?

"I think Zoey is behind all these, please believe me" Mikel said

"Maybe we forget about the past and move on" caira said, not quite sure if that was what she really wanted. Though, she wasn't convinced. But holding grudges against him won't solve anything, she would only end up hurting her self if she keeps thinking about the past.

Few\_Weeks\_Later.

Caira walked into the the restaurant with a beautiful short red gown which exposed the physic of of curvy body, she had her hair styled in a cute wave, she appeared more enchanting with her light makeup and sparkling red lipstick. it was actually her first time going on an official date with Mikel. she checked her phone again to be sure she was at the right venue, and yes, it was Le bernardin, one if the biggest restaurant in New York City.

Upon walking into the restaurant, she met a host standing by the door with a wait list on his hands.

"Good evening Miss, you are welcomed to less

bernardin. who would you like to see" the host asked nicely

"Uhhh.. Mikel Camford" caira responded

"Are you caira Hudson?" The attendant asked reading through his wait-list

'Yes I am" caira responded.

"Please!" the man said as he led her to Mikel's table. As soon as Mikel sighted her coming, he stood up and pulled out a chair for her to sit.

"Hi" Mikel said as he stared at caira who was looking dazzling that night.

"Hello, what's the look about?" Caira asked feeling uncomfortable with his gaze on her.

"You look gorgeous" Mikel complimented without taking his eyes off her.

"Thank you" caira muttered as her cheeks heated up in a blush

Mikel ordered a plate of Chinese soup, grilled chicken and a bottle of wine, while they both both eat and chatted. Caira took up her glass of wine and drank again, her glass was almost empty when she saw Mikel went down on his knees and brought out a small box which he opened and brought out a tiny gold ring.

"Caira, I know my life will never be complete without you beside me to share it, I've always dreamt of doing this and making you part of me. I promise you, no one will ever work harder to make you happy or cherish you more than me. I love you, please marry me" Mikel said while caira stared at him in shock, not knowing exactly what to say.

"Yes!!, yes, I will!!!" Caira said excitedly as she finally found her voice. mikel inserted the ring in her finger carefully and stood on his feet before planting a kiss on her lips. Suddenly, she saw a group of people who walked out applauding, she

got gobsmacked when she saw her mom, her daughter and Zack amidst the crew.

"Mom?" Caira called out in shock.

"Oh dear, I'm so happy for you" her mom muttered as she hugged her daughter who was still in shock.

"Mom, how.. did you find...

"Honey, I know everything, Mikel is Amanda's dad, why were you hiding this from me, I'm your mother" her mom interrupted

"Since when did you find out?" Caira asked.

"Well, right from the beginning, Mikel told me about it, he said he was ready to take full responsibility, remember the first day he came visiting?" Her mom asked

"Yes?" caira responded

Well, that day, he told me about everything and also promised to take full responsibility. At first, I



was really mad, but I was glad he told me and accepted to take up his responsibilities. I'm so sorry you have to move away from Seoul after your delivery, it was all my fault, I thought you decided to leave Seoul because of the bad impression and news people spread about you, I never knew you were actually trying to go far away from him, I wouldn't have let that happen. I wanted to tell you that I was aware of your relationship with him, but I feared that might cause a big misunderstanding between you two, so I decided to keep it to my self since you said it wasn't necessary for me to know" her mom explained.

"Mom I'm sorry, I was just a depressed teenage girl who wanted nothing more than to be alone" caira mumbled as she hugged her mother once more. She actually did underestimated Mikel, he was more responsible than she thought. The rest of the night was fun, it was the best and was a memorable day for everyone as they all celebrated

the engagement of the young couples-to-be.

Few\_Months\_Later

Caira shut her eyes in pleasure and grasped mikel's hair as he ate deep into the hollows of her neck and fondle with her nipples, he moved his hand underneath her thighs until his fingers got into her pussy, caira moaned lightly as she felt his finger inside of her, this got her really wet as she spread her legs widely, accommodating every bit of him.

After a while, Mikel left her lips and moved in between her, making caira uncomfortable.

"What are you doing?" Caira asked with a gasp, but Mikel plunged his tongue inside her wet hole, his warm breath was replaced by his warm wet tongue, she could feel his fingers brushing along her inner thighs, her body quivered and she arched her back to feel the palm of his hand push against her clit. She threw her head back as the softest moan escaped her lips while Mikel smirked,

knowing how badly she was trying to control herself. He ate deep into her from bottom to top, his tongue stopping to circle her clit, while caira spread her legs wider to invite him in completely, to open herself to whatever new pleasure he wanted to give her. The pleasure caira felt was just too much for her to handle as she badly wanted him inside of her, it was something she's never felt before, not even Noah had been able to drive her into another realm of pleasure.

"Babe..what are ..you do-ing!!" Caira screamed out in ecstasy as she felt his tongue hitting against her clit which was now red and sore. This happened for a while, but when the pleasure was just too much for her to handle, she squirt and ejaculated at the same time on Mikel's face. She sat up immediately, covering herself in shame.

"Oops!! Sorry!" Caira muttered with a look of embarrassment as she picked up her shirt and

attempted cleaning his face with it. But Mikel seemed not to be bothered by that, instead he moved to her and attempted kissing her, he seemed not to have had enough of her, but caira resisted.

"Please can we stop here, I can't take it anymore" caira said as she moved back while Mikel smirked.

"Alright, let me get you washed up" Mikel said as he carried her up in his arms and took her to the bathroom where they both had a bath together.

Few minutes later, Mikel brought her out of the bathroom and laid her on the bed.

Caira laid on the bed with Mikel behind her, they were both covered in a thick duvet as he pulled her very close to himself while she enjoyed the warmth of his body. He brought out his phone and placed it in front of her and began flipping through his gallery slowly, bringing back old memories of the past.

"Oh my gosh, don't tell me you still have this photo! This was 6 years back" caira exclaimed as she collected the phone and stared at the picture with a smile on her face.

"Yeah, at the KFC shop at Seoul" Mikel whispered giving her a warm cuddle underneath the duvet.

'Remember when we first met at the \*glamorous unisex stall\*?' Mikel asked

"Yes, I can never forget that day, I almost blew off your brain that day" caira bragged

"Why?" Mikel asked.

"Because you took away my dress and banned me from shopping there" caira said while Mikel laughed as he suddenly remembered what he did.

"Jerk!!" Caira said as she attempted leaving the bed but Mikel pulled her back.

"Well, I wasn't really interested in the dress, but I was Interested in you. The first day I saw you, I

developed a strange interest in you, I wanted to talk to you or make you talk to me, but I wasn't found of asking a girl out or telling her that I was interested in her, so I just had to make you talk to me by all means" Mikel stated with his Left hand hanging across her waist.

"I get it, you were too proud to talk to me" caira said as she moved his warm palm and placed it on the side of her breast.

"I just wasn't used to talking to someone I just met. At that time of my life, I discovered that making you upset and bullying you was the only thing that could make you talk to me, So I had to play along. By the way, your Ex who kidnapped Amanda has been arrested by the cops, and he's presently in Jail, would you like to see him?" Mikel asked stroking her hair gently

"No, I'm glad he has been arrested, he can rot in jail for all I care" caira replied feeling a bit upset

when she remembered what Noah made Mikel go through.

Caira was about saying something else when Mikel's phone suddenly rang out. Mikel slowly sat up and reached out for his phone, he sighed in relief when he discovered that it was his mom.

"Hello mum, I was just about calling you" Mikel said in a low tone.

"Son, how have you been doing and how is New York?" His mother asked

"I'm fine mom, I'll like to see you, but I'm not coming alone, I'll be coming with someone you'll like to see" Mikel announced

"Who is that?" his mom asked

"Well, she's someone you've missed a lot, you'll find out once we arrive" Mikel added.

"Okay son, I would also like to see you, we've got something really important to talk about". His

mom said

"Alright mom, I'll be there tomorrow" Mikel responded and ended the call. Mikel placed his phone on his drawer and joined caira on the bed

"The next day, they booked a flight to Seoul. As soon as they arrived at Incheon international airport, caira suddenly felt cold, she lived most of her life in Seoul and considered it as her hometown, but strangely, she wasn't so excited about coming home. Although, she did have moments of anticipation, seeing the old streets, shops, familiar faces and the ballet class which still stood firm and was looking as beautiful as it was 6years ago. After a long drive they finally arrived at the Camford's mansion, the driver horned and the big gate opened up while they drove in.

Upon driving into the parking lot, Caira saw madam Caroline, Dianna and some other maids who has probably been waiting on their arrival.



Mikel held her hand as they both stepped out of the car together. As soon as Dianna saw Caira, she flug up in joy as she ran her and hugged her tightly.

"Caira, I missed you, where have you been all these years?" Dianna said as they disengaged.

"I missed you to, sorry I wasn't able to come back, I'll explain later" caira said while madam Caroline also walked to her.

"Caira dear, we missed you" Madam Caroline said as she hugged her.

"I missed you all to ma'am, it's so nice to finally see you again" caira said as she beemed a smile.

Madam Caroline was about saying something else when Mikel interrupted.

"I get it, it seems I'm now too invisible for anyone to notice" Mikel said playfully.

"Oh dear, we also missed you, but we've been worried about Caira, I prepared dinner, why don't

we go in?" madam Caroline said ushering them in while Dianna and the maids helped them with their luggages. When they got into the sitting room, they spent a lot of time together, it wasn't as bad as caira thought it'll be, she felt welcomed and relaxed until Mikel brought up a certain conversation.

"I brought caira here today, to inform you about our marriage plans" Mikel announced as he held her hands.

"What marriage plans?" Madam Caroline asked in confusion.

"Well, I and caira are engaged. She already has a child for me, sorry I wanted to tell you earlier" Mikel announced While his mom's smiling face suddenly curved into a frown, but she tried as much as possible not to make it visible.

"Uhhh... Mikel, can I see you for a moment?" Madam Caroline asked as she stood up and left for

her room while Mikel followed behind her anxiously. As soon they were both in the bedroom, madam Caroline shut the door to ensure that no one heard their conversation.

"Mikel, what was that about?" Madam Caroline asked upon facing Mikel

"What are you talking about?" Mikel asked.

"How can you have a child with caira, and as if that wasn't enough damages, you decided to get married to her!!?" Madam Caroline asked almost in a whisper.

"And what's wrong with me getting married to the person I love?" Mikel asked already pissed.

"You can't get married to Caira!!" His mum said.

"Why?" Mikel asked

"Mikel, I'm sorry but you two can't get married" madam Caroline said

"Well, if you have nothing important to say, then I'm sorry but I'll have to exempt you from the marriage plans, I don't need your approval" Mikel said in anger and was about leaving when his mother spoke out.

"What about Naomi?" His mother asked while Mikel froze instantly.

TBC

Who's Naomi

My better half

Highschool crush

Authoress Prudence

Episode 51

"What about Naomi?" His mom asked while he froze instantly.

"What about her?" Mikel asked with keen interest as he turned around to face her.

"Have you forgotten, Naomi has a child for you, you can't marry someone else other than her, she wouldn't let the wedding stand. I don't hate Caira, I love her like my own daughter, which is why I don't want you to ruin her life, I don't want her to be heartbroken and disappointed when she finds out that you have another woman and a child other than her, I don't want her to hate you and regret knowing you, I don't want her to have a divided home. Please understand with me and call of the wedding" his mother pleaded

"Mom, she won't find out, Caira wouldn't know except you tell her, that shouldn't be a big deal, I can't call off the wedding!" Mikel said almost in a whisper.

"She would definitely find out soon because Naomi called me yesterday, she said she saw you flaunting another woman's picture on Instagram, she was really mad at us because we never called

to find out how she and child were doing. She also mentioned that she would like to see you.....

"What does she want from me, we broke up already" Mikel interrupted

"I don't know son, but I think it's high time you let caira know. Things are going to get really crazy if you let her find out her self or hear about it from someone else, she would feel bad and would never trust you again. But if you tell her, you can reconcile and she would decide if still want to continue with the wedding plans" his mom said.

"I can't do that, I have let her down and hurt her enough" Mikel said

"Mikel, this happened in the past, everyone makes mistake, I'm sure she would forgive you. The earlier you tell her, the better for you two" his mother concluded.

\*\*\*\*\*

"Caira, all that happened and you left me clueless? I thought we were friends?" Dianna asked in shock.

"Well....."

"Well?" Dianna asked.

"Uhhh... let's talk about the wedding, I want you to be my chief bridesmaid" caira said trying to avoid Dianna's question.

"Really, oh my gosh, I can't wait. What color of wedding gown would you like, I can also help you select beautiful colors" Dianna said as she picked up her tab and started surfing through the net, in search of beautiful wedding gown.

"Don't be silly, wedding gown are always white, you don't expect me to wear a Barbie gown, do you?" Caira asked

"Aha!!! Here's a pink wedding gown, isn't it adorable?" Dianna asked showing caira a pink wedding gown on her phone screen.

"I can't wear this, it looks..

"Oh my gosh, it cost \$75.000 and an extra \$5.000 for delivery. Can I order it?" Dianna asked as she was about clicking on the \*purchase\* button, but caira stopped her.

"No, you can't waste such amount of money on a wedding gown, it's so expensive" caira complained.

"C'mon Caira, this is gonna be the biggest wedding in town, you are getting married into the Camford's family, this wedding is gonna be the talk of the Town, many celebrities will be honoring this great wedding, the press would be here and they would publish everything on the news, I wouldn't want people to wonder why my brother's bride is wearing a cheap gown, I want something expensive and gorgeous, a wedding gown that no one would ever be able to stand it's sight. This is gonna be the best day of my life!!!" Dianna said in excitement.



"Yeah, me too. Mikel has been the best thing that has ever happened to me, it'll be a dream come true to spend the rest of my life with him. I still find it hard to believe that I'm getting married to my celebrity crush" caira muttered as she picked up her body lotion and began applying it on her body. Shortly, the door opened revealing Mikel's gloomy face, Caira smiled upon seeing him.

"What's up babe" Caira asked with a smile while Mikel walked into the room and sat on the bed with a sigh.

"Dianna, it's late" Mikel muttered with a cold stare

"Yeah I Know" Dianna answered

"Back to your room now, it's time for you to go to bed" Mikel stated while caira shot him a hard stare.

"Duh, I wasn't going to sleep with your bride. I'll be back tomorrow morning. Good night Caira!"

Dianna said with an eye roll as she left Caira's

room and shut the door.

"Why are you acting weird, you should've asked her out politely" Caira stated

"Forget about her. I really have something important to tell you" Mikel said as he stared directly at Caira who seemed to show keen interest in what he was about saying.

"Sure!" Caira said with a smile.

Mikel stared at her for a while, not knowing how to start, she seemed to be in a good mood that evening and she should probably be tired after the long journey. He felt it was quite early to tell her, maybe he should tell her the next day or whenever it is convenient.

"Babe?" Caira called out, jolting him out of his thoughts.

"Uhhh... we'll be going back to New York tomorrow" Mikel muttered while caira furrowed

her brows in confusion.

"Why the rush? We just arrived Seoul today and we'll be leaving tomorrow?" Caira asked

"Well, I'll like us to start the wedding preparations. the wedding is taking place in New York" Mikel said

.

"We can't....

"Babe please! We leave tomorrow morning, that's final" Mikel interrupted while caira went mute instantly.

"Okay, I'll start parking" Caira muttered sadly as she put on her pyjamas and laid on the bed quietly. Mikel felt guilty for shutting her up without giving her a good reason why they were leaving so soon, but he couldn't tell her. He joined her on the bed and he placed his hand across her waist.

"I'm sorry, I only want us to start the wedding preparations early" Mikel said in a calm voice.

"What did your mom said about me" Caira asked in suspicion.

kindly hi novelsrepublic on WhatsApp on plus two three four eight zero five five eight eight nine one right three to get added to the novels group

"Nothing, she was only curious to know how we both had a child together" Mikel lied.

"I hope you aren't mad at me?" Mikel asked with a faux smile.

"Not at all, I was just curious to know why you're in a hurry to leave" Caira said

"Alright, I'd like to see you smile" Mikel said

"Why?" Caira asked.

"To be rest assured that you aren't mad at me" Mikel replied.

"Oh please, I'm sleepy already" Caira said and was about shutting her eyes when Mikel started tickling

her on her waist up to her ribs and Tommy.

"Stop it Mikel, that tickles" Caira said amidst laughter as she moved vigorously on the bed.

The\_Next\_Morning

Caira packed up her stuffs quickly, it was 9:00am, she was all set and ready to leave for New York. Mikel was already at the sitting room waiting impatiently for her.

"Sorry for keeping you waiting, I'm all set" Caira said as she carried her luggages down the stairs while Mikel rushed to help her, he carried the bag to the car and placed it inside the boot himself while caira walked into the car. he was just too impatient to let the drivers do it.

"Oh, i forgot my makeup kit" caira said leaving the car.

"Wait, I'll get you a new one once we get to New York" Mikel said impatiently.

"Uhhh...that isn't necessary, my kits are just upstairs, I would be back in a minute" caira said as she left hurriedly.

"Babe, we would miss our flight" Mikel said worriedly.

"Don't worry, we won't!!" Caira muttered as she ran upstairs to get her makeup kit. She noticed Mikel's uneasiness and restlessness, it was as if he was actually running away from a monster who was out for him. As soon as she got to her room, she started ransacking the entire room in search of her makeup kit, but she couldn't find it, so she decided to check if it was in Dianna's room. Upon getting to her room, she met Dianna still asleep, she heaved a sigh of relief and walked in quietly. luckily, she found it on her dressing table, so she picked it up quickly. she was about leaving when her powder which was inside a glass container fell on the floor and broke to pieces, waking Dianna up

from sleep, Dianna seemed to have used it, forgetting to couple it back.

"Caira, where're you going this early?" Dianna asked upon waking up

"Sorry, we're going back to New York today" caira muttered and left the room hurriedly while Dianna followed behind her.

As soon as she got outside, she met madam Caroline outside.

"Oh dear, I'll miss you so much"she said as she gave caira a warm hug.

"Not now mum" Mikel muttered impatiently.

"Caira, you're leaving so soon?" Dianna asked with a pout

Caira was about answering her when the big gate suddenly went open and and a blue car was seen driving in. The car stopped by the parking lot and a young beautiful lady of Caira's age was seen

stepping out of the car, along side a little boy. Mikel's lips dropped in shock as he stared at the young lady who was putting on a short black gown and dark shades.

"Long time no see Mikel, did you miss me?" She asked with a smirk as she took off her dark sunglasses. Mikel stared at her in shock, not knowing what to say. Caira also stared at her with keen interest, she has never met that particular lady before, but she felt something was wrong, Mikel's facial expression explained it all.

"babe,.. what's the problem?" Caira asked mikel who lost his tongues, but the lady answered rudely.

"Oh, I see!! You're the lady on his DP, it's such an honor to finally get to meet you in person, he's been flaunting your videos and pictures all over the social media, you're indeed beautiful. It seems I was wrong, the pictures was not photoshopped" she commented sarcastically.



"First of all, I wasn't talking to you, secondly, who are you?" Caira asked.

"She's nobody, let's leave now" Mikel said as he held Caira's hand and tried taking her away, but Caira declined, she was anxious to know who the lady was, she can't be nobody.

"Well, I'd like to answer your question by introducing myself first. I'm Naomi Havard, an Ex-super model, the only daughter of Governor Harvard Wang, and the mother of Mikel's son" she said the last part with a smirk. Caira felt a loud bang in her head as soon as she heard her, her eyes slowly drifted to the little boy who was standing close to her.

"By the way, I'll be inside" Naomi said as she walked past Dianna and her mom who stood quietly, they knew it was a dead end for Mikel and Caira's wedding plans and there was absolutely nothing they could do. As soon as Naomi walked

into the sitting room, Caira followed her in while Mikel also followed behind her quickly.

"Hey, stop talking nonsense, get out right now, or else, I'll be forced to call the cops on you" caira said upon walking into the sitting room.

"Oh dear, call the cops on me?. I bet you don't wanna know who my father really is" Naomi said laughing out loud.

"I don't care, leave now!!" Caira said at the top of her voice.

"Calm down young lady. You can ask your man if I'm lying" Naomi said as she took of her heels and rested on the couch.

"Mikel, why aren't you saying anything?, ask her out right now" Caira said but Mikel couldn't utter a word. His silence only brought her fear as she turned to face him.

"Is she telling the truth?" Caira asked with a teary

voice while Mikel still couldn't say anything. In as much as he badly wanted to tell her that it was a lie, he still couldn't get himself to lie to her again.

"She's lying right, she's just a crazy b....

"She isn't lying, she's saying the truth, Im sorry I never told you all this while, I was going to tell you, I never planned on hiding this forever" Mikel said remorsefully. As soon as Mikel said that, tears rolled down freely from her eyes. It happened again, just when she thought she was about getting a happy family at last, it happened that she has only been daydreaming about something which was never coming to pass.

"Why?, Why do you keep lying to me over and over again, what have I done to deserve all this?" Caira said as she broke down in tears

"I'm sorry, I never meant to hurt you again, I was thinking of a better way to tell you" Mikel said

"Why do you want to ruin me again? I never forced you to get married to me because we had a child together, why did you keep deceiving me and using me? Why? Tell me why" caira asked on top of her voice as she picked up the throw pillow and threw it against Mikel

"Well, the wedding wasn't going to hold anyway, because I'm back to occupy my vacant position" Naomi muttered as she sat comfortably and enjoyed the whole scene

"Shut up Naomi, or else I'll be forced to ask you to leave my house" madam Caroline scolded with a Stern look

"Sorry mother-in-law, but this is my husband's house, you can go back to your husband's house if you aren't comfortable with me around here" Naomi uttered with so much guts while Dianna got paranoid.

"How dare you bitch, how dare you speak to my

mother in such manner" Dianna said in anger as she attempted walking up to Naomi, but her mother got hold of her.

"Thank you so much Mikel, thank you for allowing me to waste my life on you" Caira said as she stormed out of the house

"Caira please wait, you can't leave. You and Mikel are still engaged!!" Dianna yelled out while caira stopped and turned around with a faux smile as she stared at the ring on her finger

"Oh! Thank you Danny. Mikel, you can have your ring back" caira said as she attempted pulling the ring out of her finger, but Mikel stopped her.

"Caira please, it hasn't gotten to that, we can talk about....

"Let go of me" Caira said as she eventually hit Mikel across his face. She seemed to regret her actions immediately as her eyes dimmed when she

realized that she just slapped him. She felt like apologizing, but Mikel has caused her so much pains already and it hurts more than a mere slap.

"Don't you ever come looking for me" caira said as she threw the engagement ring on the floor and stormed out of the house with her purse.

TBC

Wedding Don scatter ,oya everybody go home

Kindly Hi NovelsRepublic on +2348055889183 on WhatsApp to get added to our novels group and get PDF links

My better half

Highschool crush

Authoress Prudence

Episode 52

"Don't you ever come looking for me" caira said as she threw the engagement ring on the floor and

stormed out of the house with her purse. Mikel stood devastated for a moment as he watched her disappear, a smirk escaped Naomi's lips as she stared at him in contentment, tearing them apart was not so difficult after all.

"Mikel don't just stand there, go after her now!!"  
Madam Caroline yelled out while Mikel picked up his car key and scurried off

"Mikel, you ain't going nowhere, I came to see you and I wouldn't let you chase after any bitch!!"  
Naomi said in anger

"That's not a problem at all Naomi, you're welcome, please make your self comfortable"  
Dianna said with a faux smile, stopping Naomi from going after Mikel.

Mikel drove out in search of Caira, but he couldn't find any trace of her, he seemed to have lost her, but he still had to find her and explain everything to her.

\*\*\*\*\*

A maid walked into the sitting room with a glass of wine and placed it carefully on the table.

"Madam, your drink is served" the maid said with a bow while Naomi stared at the drink awkwardly before pushing the drink off the table.

"What the hell is this, I never asked for a drink. Do you really think you can poison me?" Naomi asked in anger while the maid went down on her knees immediately.

"Madam, the drink isn't poisoned, you requested for a drink few minutes ago" the maid said while Naomi suddenly remembered that she actually asked for a drink.

"Whatever, you can clean up the mess later. pick up my bag and show me to my room" Naomi ordered as she and her son stood up and trailed behind the maid. Soon, they arrived at a



beautiful and well furnished bedroom which was empty, it appeared to be the guest room.

"Here's your room madam" the maid said with a bow.

"Who's room is this?" Naomi asked walking into the room and scouring her eyes around it.

"No one ma'am, this is the guest....."

"I never asked you to bring me to the guest room, I'm not a guest. Where's Mikel's bedroom?" Naomi asked

"Please come with me ma'am" the maid answered while Naomi followed her all the way to Mikel's bedroom. As soon as they got into Mikel's room, the maid stopped by the door.

"Ma'am, here is the Masters bedroom" the maid replied.

kindly hi novelsrepublic on WhatsApp on plus two three four eight zero five five eight eight nine one

right three to get added to the novels group

"Well, open it, I want to go in" Naomi requested.

"Sorry ma'am, I can't do that, this room does not only belong to the master but his fiance equally sleeps here, I'm not permitted to.....

"Open the damn door if you still want your job here" Naomi threatened while the maid hesitated for a while before deciding to open the door.

Naomi's lips curved in a smirk as she stared at the room, it was quite beautiful and worthy of sleeping.

"Who brought in this trash?" Naomi asked as she pushed Caira's luggages which was now in the room.

"Madam Caroline asked me to bring them in" the maid replied

"Henceforth, this is where I'll be sleeping, you can throw this rags away" Naomi said but the maid still stood immovable.

"I said dispose this trash outside" Naomi repeatedly as she stared at the hesitant maid.

"But...

"No but, do as I say" Naomi ordered while the maid packed up Caira's luggages and was about leaving when Naomi called her back.

"Wait!! I'll do it my self" Naomi said with a broad smile as a mischievous thought came nagging in her mind.

\*\*\*\*\*

Mikel packed his car in the dark and stepped out, it was about 8:05pm and everywhere was already dark, but he still couldn't find Caira. He already gave he more than 20 phone calls, but she wasn't taking his calls.

He sighted a man walking down the street, so he thought of asking him some questions. Of course, that was what he has been doing, asking every

single person he came across in the street if they had seen a lady in yellow dress and brown blonde hair around. He just had to swallow his pride, status and fame and try to act humble.

"Sir, I'm looking for a lady in yellow dress and brown hair, have you seen any one like that around here?" Mikel repeated for the umpteenth time.

"You should check down the bridge young man, I think there's someone like that over there" the elderly man said pointing his middle finger towards the beach. Mikel stared down the bridge and noticed that there was a lady sitting at the river bank, he rushed down when he discovered that it was caira. Caira heard footsteps behind her, so she turned around to see who it was, when she saw that it was Mikel, she turned around and simply ignored his presence.

"It's not safe out here" Mikel muttered upon

getting close to her.

"I'm not safe with you either" Caira also answered after a long silence.

"Please come back with me, we need to talk" Mikel said

"There's no need for that now, you should've done that long ago. How could you have a woman and a child in your life and still come back for me? What was your aim when you proposed to me? Do you really think I'm ready to share my man with another woman? I don't want my marriage to be under threats because of another woman, I don't want to have a divided home at the end, I don't want to keep fighting another woman all my life, asking her to stay away from my family. I want to have a happy home where no one can come between us,...

"Caira, it's not what you think, please hear..."

"Please let me finish. What do you expect me to think when you've been fooling me all this while?. I remember when you asked me about my past, if I had ever love someone so much, I told you the truth, I told you about my relationship with Noah and how we broke up, I opened up my heart and mind to you, I never hid anything from you, but when I asked you the same question, you said I was the first person you've ever fallen in love with. When you said that, I felt lucky, but now I feel stupid to ever believe you. It's fine, it's not entirely your fault, it's mine, I am just too naive and gullible, I guess I was just too desperate to find true love" caira said as she wiped her tears with her palm

"Please hear me out. Naomi was my first girlfriend even before I met you. When I first met Naomi, we were just 17. I met her at a grand opening, we both fell in love with each other that night. Few months after we started dating, I told her that I wanted us to have sex, but she said she wasn't ready. At first, I

was really upset, but I later decided to respect her decision, our relationship went well until Valentine's day, I don't know what came over her that night but she made the first move and we eventually had sex without protection. Few weeks after Valentine's day, she informed me that she was pregnant for me, I was scared of her ruining my reputation, so I denied the child. She threatened to ruin my reputation if I don't accept the pregnancy, so I broke up with her, after our break up, I never heard from her again, she went into hiding. But I never believed that she'll be back after 8years" Mikel concluded, also sitting on the Sandy river bank.

"I'm not mad at you for having another woman, it happened in the past and we all make mistake, but I'm just upset because you never told me about it, we've been together right from when we were teenagers and now we're planning on getting married, why didn't you tell me all this years? Why

did you leave me in total darkness?, What if she didn't show up today, but shows up during our wedding and ruin everything? What if shows up after the wedding, it'll have been too late to make amends and call off the wedding" caira asked in a low tone.

"Caira, I'm not calling off the wedding" Mikel said loud enough that he could hear his voice echo around the quiet environment.

"Really? what's your plan, you can't send her away because she has a child for you and that'll be inhumane if you do that!" Caira also said.

"Caira, all I'm asking for is more time" Mikel requested hopefully.

"More time to do what?" Caira asked.

"More time to think of something, please stay with me for now and give me a week to think of something" Mikel said



"There is no way out of this, it'll have been easier to sort out if you both don't have a child together, and I can't go back to the mansion while she's still in there" Caira said

"I understand, I'll arrange for a lodge..."

"Yes, I would leave after seven days and wish you both a happy married life, because there is no way out of this except she change her mind and decide to let us be" Caira interrupted

After few moments together, Caira agreed to Mikel's idea, but she still needed to get her clothes in the mansion, so Mikel drove her back home to get her clothes. When they arrived at the gate, Caira was shocked as she saw one of her bra lying on top of the big gate, she couldn't remember hanging any of her clothes there, how could it have gotten up there?. The gate opened immediately while Mikel drove in roughly. Immediately Caira stepped out of the car, she saw her clothes littered

all over the floor, she also discovered that the two trash can were filled with her clothes, this really got her paranoid as she walked into the house.

"Sally, Sally!!, Who the hell put my clothes in the trash can?". Caira asked as she stormed into the house

"Oops!! Are those what you call clothes?. Anyways, I got rid of your rags because it was making everywhere messy" Naomi said climbing down the staircase

"Naomi, I know you're....

"Hey!! I don't ever want to hear my name in that filthy mouth of yours, you're not worthy enough to mention my name. You're nobody compared to me, after much investigation about your background, it turns out that you're just a dirty filthy thing whom Mikel picked and cleaned up.....

"Naomi....

"Oh please let me finish Mikel, I'm not lying, am I?"  
Naomi interrupted Mikel rudely.

Mikel was about saying something when caira cut him off

"You aren't lying, but please hear me out. I am not that desperate to fight for a man" caira said, but this only got Naomi more upset as she lifted up her right hand in attempt to slap Caira, but Mikel got hold of her hands.

"How dare you call me desperate, let go of me"  
Naomi said as she freed her hand from Mikel's grip.

Caira, let's leave, she's crazy, she won't listen"  
Mikel said as he held Caira's hand and led her out of the house.

"Yes, go away, I'll be waiting till you come back, I'm not leaving this mansion" Naomi yelled after them.

Three\_Days\_Later

"Sally!!!" Naomi yelled out while a maid ran out looking tensed

"Yes madam" the maid answered upon getting to her

"Where is everyone?" Naomi asked

"They've all gone out ma'am" the maid answered with a bow

"It's been 3 days since i arrived here, but they all left me to these useless maids. Where the hell is Mikel's old lady?" Naomi asked but the maid seemed not to understand what she was saying.

"Where's Mikel's mom dummy?" Naomi repeated

"She went on a business trip with Dianna" the maid answered in fear

"Really? When did Dianna start attending business trips?" Naomi asked

"I don't know ma'am, but they'll be back soon" the

maid answered.

"Where is Mikel?" Naomi asked.

"I don't know ma'am, but they'll all be back soon" the maid answered while Naomi clenched her fist in anger

"You know what? Go tell them that I'll set the house ablaze if I don't see anyone before the end of today" Naomi yelled with a thundering voice while the maid ran to the and picked up the home telephone and dialed madam Caroline's number.

"Hello ma'am, it's Sally" the maid said almost in a whisper.

"Oh Sally, how are you doing, I hope you're taking good care of Naomi? I wouldn't want her to get upset" madam Caroline answered sarcastically.

"Things aren't going well madam. She threatened to set the house on fire if no one returns back home" the maid said, constantly checking if Naomi

was coming.

"Oh dear, she can do whatever she likes, if she burn down the house, she would have to find a place to pass the night until whenever I am ready to come back" madam Caroline said as she laughed out

"Madam, she's really worried, she wants to see all of you, she wants me to tell her your whereabouts" the maid complained.

"Don't tell her am at Hawaii, you can keep on telling her that I went for a business trip. When i asked her to leave my house, she was moving in with us, but she never mentioned that she still need my presence in the house, I left her under the care of my maids, why does she still need me?. Well, if she really need to see someone, you can call Mikel and tell him to come home" Madam Caroline said sarcastically

"He isn't taking any of my calls" the maid

answered.

"What about caira?" Madam Caroline asked

"Miss Caira isn't either" the maid said while madam Caroline went silent for a while.

"Well, tell her I'll be back soon, have fun!" Madam Caroline said as she ended the call.

"Mom, what does she want this time?" Dianna asked as taking of her sunglasses

"Relax, just one of her dumb threats" madam Caroline said as she picked up her coconut water and sipped

"Hawaii island is one of the best place in the world to spend the holiday, the sight is just so breathe taking" madam Caroline said as she enjoyed the sight in front of her.

"Yes, I wonder how Mikel and caira are doing right now" Dianna said.

\*\*\*\*\*

Mikel sat on the bed, surfing through the internet while caira sat in front of the mirror combing her messy hair, it's been a week since they've been in the hotel, she still couldn't believe that everyone left the house just because of a woman. While surfing through the internet, Mikel received a message, he checked it and was shocked when he discovered that it was a sex tape, he looked clearly and could detect his face and Naomi's face, that was on Valentine's night

"What's that?" Caira asked as she noticed the change of expression on his face, so Mikel handed over the phone to her. Caira watched it quietly until she was done watching

"Naomi sent this to you?" Caira asked.

"Yes, she said she would share it on the internet if she doesn't see me in less than an hour" Mikel said.



"How did she get this video?" Caira asked as she placed down the phone

"I don't know, this was Valentine's night" Mikel answered

"Fine. Let's go back to the mansion, I have a plan" caira said.

After a long drive, they finally arrived at the mansion, it seems no one was home. Upon walking in, they met Naomi in the sitting room, the entire place was messy with broken bottles on the floor.

"You finally decided to come back home, it seems you still haven't changed, you still care a lot about your reputation" Naomi muttered.

"I'm here now, where's the video?" Mikel asked.

"Don't bother sweetie, I won't share the video as long as you cooperate with me" she said.

"What do you want?" Mikel asked

"Well, it's simple, let's get married" Naomi said while Mikel contemplated for a while before answering

"I will, as long as you don't share the video" Mikel muttered as he dipped his hands in his pocket and brought out an engagement ring while Naomi rushed to him and snatched it out of his hand.

"Oh my God, this is beautiful" Naomi muttered putting the ring on her finger.

"Uhhh.... Mikel, this wasn't part of the plan, what are you doing, you're not supposed to give her the ring" Caira asked as she furrowed her brows in confusion.

"Sorry Caira, but the plan has changed, I can't risk my reputation" Mikel stated

"What do you mean, we're still engaged!" Caira said

"I'm sorry" Mikel said while Naomi smirked in joy.

"Send her away" Naomi said in excitement while Mikel hesitated for a while before answering

"Caira, please leave us" Mikel stated with so much reluctance.

TBC

My better half

Highschool crush

Authoress Prudence

Episode 53 (FINAL EPISODE)

"Caira, please leave" Mikel said with so much reluctance

"I'm not, I'm not going anywhere, I have a daughter for you, remember?" caira said in anger

"You can't stay here doing nothing, if you want to stay here, you'll have to serve us" Mikel stated

\*\*\*\*\*

Caira fed the little boy with the chocolate pie as

she watched him eat slowly, she felt like there was something strange about Naomi and her so called \*son\*. how could a lady in her right senses entrust her child to her rival and worst enemy? After the fight, she handed over her child to her without considering wether she'll hurt her child or not. She still doubted if Jordan was really her son, or she was just using him to get back at Mikel.

"Hey, eat up" Caira said in a low voice

"I'm full" the boy muttered while caira sighed tiredly before putting away the plate

"Is Naomi your mom?" Caira asked.

"Yes" the boy replied with a nod.

"For how long has she been your mother?" Caira asked again

"For as long as I can remember" the boy answered licking up his finger while Caira smiled and stroked his hair gently.

"He's so adorable, but his mom is just a bitch" Caira said within her. She was still seated beside the boy when Naomi walked up to her.

"What are you feeding him with" Naomi asked as she stared at the chocolate pie in disgust

" obviously, it's a chocolate pie" Caira muttered as she stood up and attempted leaving but Naomi picked up the plate of pie and threw it on her face.

"How does it feel?" Naomi asked with a look of contentment while caira picked up a handkerchief from her uniform and wiped her face.

"What do you want?" Caira asked with a sigh

"I want you to leave this house" Naomi muttered.

"I'm not leaving, you can go to hell" Caira said while Naomi lifted her hands to hit her but caira got hold of her hand. Naomi sighted Mikel coming so she fell on her feet immediately. Before Mikel could say anything, Naomi spoke out

"She was forcing the pie into Jordan's mouth, I tried stopping her but she smashed the cake with her fist and pushed me" Naomi cried out in pretense

"She's lying, I never did...."

"Enough caira, go back to work" Mikel ordered while caira left in disappointment.

Few\_weeks\_Later

Madam Caroline drove into the parking lot and halted, after a while, she and Dianna stepped out of the car. they met Naomi who was sitting outside with a glass of wine on a small table in front of her, Naomi pretended not to see them as she picked up her glass of juice and sipped from it, after which she buried her face in the magazine she was reading.

"Excuse me young lady, didn't you see us coming?" Dianna asked as she walked up to her.

"So what? Who the hell do you think you are to go out and come back whenever you feel like?" Naomi asked

"You bitch, this is my father's house, you can tell Mikel to take you to his own apartment in New York!!" Dianna said in anger

"Oh, till then" Naomi replied as she picked up her magazine and was about opening it when Dianna snatched it from her hands but Naomi slapped her and pulled the magazine out of her hands, leaving Dianna and her mom in shock.

"Naomi how dare you hit my daughter in my presence!!" Dianna's mom said as she also lifted up her hand to hit Naomi, but Naomi got hold of her hands and threw it down.

"Hey, why are you sounding like I started the fight? If she had not attacked me first, I wouldn't have hit her" Naomi said with an eye roll. they were still outside when they sighted Mikel walking towards

them

"Good thing you're here mikel, take this animal you call a fiance to New York and don't ever return with her" madam Caroline yelled in anger.

"I'm not leaving, everyone must attend our wedding!" Naomi said with an authoritative voice.

"Naomi, you're not welcome into this family, you're so bad mannered. I don't blame you anyways, I blame Mikel for having an affair with you at the first place" Dianna yelled out with tears threatening to drop from her eyes

"Well, I don't need everyone to like me, in as much as we both have a son together, then we are getting married and no one can stand against it" Naomi said with a smirk, but she turned around as soon as she heard a voice behind her

"Except me" caira said as she walked out of the house.



"Arghhh, please get back to work, a maid can't have a say when Masters are talking" Naomi said with a groan

"What if I tell them that you both never really had a child together? What if I tell them that Jordan isn't Mikel's son?" Caira said.

"Wha---what are you talking about? Get outta my face!!" Naomi said looking uneasy

"Give it up Naomi! Tell everyone that Jordan isn't Mikel's son, tell everyone that you were already pregnant when you and Mikel made out, tell everyone that.....

"Shut up bitch!! You're a pathetic liar, leave now if you don't want to spend the rest of your life in jail, do you know you can be sued for accusing me wrongly without a solid evidence?" Naomi stammered in fear.

"I know, which is why I have an evidence" caira

said as she brought out a paper from her pocket

"This test result shows clearly that Jordan and mikel are not related in anyway, why did you lie Naomi,why did you want to give your son to the wrong father?" Caira said, but Naomi snatched the test paper and shredded it into tiny pieces.

"This result was manipulated, I can't accept it" Naomi said as she squeezed the pieces and put it in her pocket

"You can destroy the evidence if that pleases you, but I still have your son's blood sample, and I can ask the doctor to conduct another test result if you're still not clear" caira said

"How dare you take my son's blood....

"Oh please Naomi, like you care about him that much. I knew there was something fishy about you and your son, when Mikel told me how you both had sex on Valentine's night. Initially, you said you

were not interested in having sex with him, but on Valentine's night, you actually pushed your self to him, you were not drunk, you were perfectly in your right senses, but you made the first move after saying "no" to him.....

"It was just a coincidence" Naomi interrupted

"Yes, I also thought of that. But if it was really a coincidence, how did you have the sex tape. It's obvious that you planned out everything and hid a camera in the room just to cover up the fact that you were pregnant for someone else. I'm sure you never thought that the sex tape would implicate you" Caira said

"Mikel, she's lying, you have to believe me" Naomi said to mikel

"It was all a plot Naomi, the engagement ring Mikel gave to you is a fake one, I'm sure you never looked properly because you were too stupid to do so. I choose to work as a maid, so I can have easy

access to your son, and it turns out that my suspicions were right after all" Caira fired at her.

Kindly Hi NovelsRepublic on +2348055889183 on WhatsApp to get added to our novels group and get PDF links

"I suppose you should be speaking by now and not trying to cover up the fact" mikel said with a Stern look.

"Mikel, you have to forgive me, I never meant to do this but it was just so shameful to tell the people that the only daughter of Governor Harvard was pregnant for a nobody. After we started dating, I never wanted to make out with you because I was scared of the consequences, my father invested so much in me and I didn't want to let him down, he has always wanted me to be a super model and I've also worked so hard to realize that, but all my dreams shattered after I attended Chloe's birthday party, I was drugged and raped by some group of

gangsters, after that incidence, I decided to keep it to my self and never speak of it to anyone, not even my mom. But I realized that I couldn't hide it anymore when I discovered that I was pregnant, I was scared of loosing you, so I decided to put it all on you, which was why I plotted out everything on Valentine's night. After I informed you that I was pregnant and you told me to get rid of the child, I knew my life was definitely coming to an end, when my dad found out, he was so disappointed in me, I was interviewed and attacked by the press, they wanted to know who's child I was carrying because we were dating. But I never had the courage to mention your name which was why I went into hiding. I'm sorry Mikel, please forgive me" Naomi pleaded in tears, but Mikel seemed not to be moved by her tears.

"I'm sorry you have to go through this Naomi"  
Caira muttered sincerely but Dianna laughed out loud

"I don't need anyone's sympathy. Mikel, I just want you to know that I once loved you, and I still....."

"I think you should stop loving me because I already stopped 8 years ago" Mikel interrupted with no remorse.

"I don't care, I don't care if you already found out that Jordan is not your son, but I still want us to be together" Naomi asked hopefully.

"Or else what? What makes you think Mikel would want to leave Caira for you?" Dianna asked arrogantly

"The sex tape would" Naomi threatened while Dianna scuffed.

"You see, she does not deserve any sympathy, she's so annoying" Dianna said

"You can go ahead and release the sex tape if you like, you are free to tag me along on your post, that means nothing to me" Mikel said while Naomi

smiled

"Oh, fine, I'll leave now. I'll share the video after 24 hours. Think about it" Naomi said as she walked into the house and came out with her luggages and her son, she was about walking into her car when Mikel stopped her.

"Naomi, I feel so sorry for you, please wait" Mikel said with a smirk while Naomi stopped and turned around hopefully. Mikel picked up a pie from his car and walked towards Naomi, everyone was shocked by what he did next, he actually threw the pie on her face and smirked in comfort.

"Get lost" Mikel muttered with a look of satisfaction while she ran into her car and zoomed off. but Caira walked to him and hit him slightly on his arm.

"What was that for" Caira asked almost in a whisper.

"Well, I guess it was payback" Mikel said with a shrug.

"Mikel, I think she's serious, she's really going to share the sex tape, are you sure you're cool with that? It's going to ruin your reputation and it'll cost you a lot" Caira asked worriedly While Mikel inserted his hands in his pocket and brought out the engagement ring and put it on her finger

"I don't care about what people would say about me, as long as you're my side, the only voice I hear is yours, I can't hear others criticism" Mikel said as he planted a kiss on her forehead

"Urghh--- can the wedding continue" Dianna interrupted with a groan.

"Of course bridesmaid" Caira said as she placed her left hand on his hand while Mikel held onto it tightly.

"Oh my goodness mum, I'm going to be Caira's



chief bridesmaid" Dianna said as she hugged her mom.

\*\*\*\*\*

10\_YEARS\_LATER

"Mom, you and Dad really went through all that" Amanda asked in shock

"Yes baby, we did. knowing your father was nothing but an adventure" Caira said with a smile

"I don't think Collins love me, I want to break up with him" Amanda said while caira got alarmed.

"Why, Collins is a nice guy" caira said.

"Collins never faught for me like dad did for you. Infact, the way I and Collins met was rather too easy, and we've not faught for each other. I met Collins at the cafeteria and he offered to pay for my lunch, and after that, we started hanging out together until he asked me to be his girlfriend. Ever since I accepted to date him, we've not had any

serious fight, I feel stucked in a boring relationship where nothing serious ever happens" Amanda said with a pout.

"Mandy, because you and Collins never encountered any difficulty, it doesn't mean your relationship is boring. not all relationship have so much challenges" caira said with a chuckle.

"Jimi is already asleep, he hasn't been listening to your story" Amanda said as she pinched her brothers cheek.

"He's just 8, I think I was boring him with my long story. I'm not very good at telling bedtime stories, good thing grandma would be here tomorrow, she's very good at it" Caira said as she held him properly in her arms. They were still seated at the balcony when the gate opened and mikel drove in, Amanda lightened up as soon as she saw her dad driving in.

"Yeh!!! Daddy is back" Amanda yelled out as she

ran to Mikel who stepped out of the car. Amanda threw her self on her dad in excitement while Mikel lifted her up

"Amanda, you're 16, you need to learn how to carry your self like a grown lady and not like a child" Caira said as she walked to Mikel with Jimi on her shoulder.

"Is someone jealous?" Mikel asked teasingly.

"I'm not" Caira said as she handed over Jimi to Amanda.

"Or does someone misses me, but don't know how to say it" Mikel asked as he grabbed her waist and pulled her to himself while Amanda chuckled

"Jeez!! Not in front of the kids" caira whispered as she moved away from him.

"C'mon mom, I'm not a kid, don't act like you're still dad's maid" Amanda said with an eye roll while Mikel stared at caira in shock.

"Babe, did you tell her anything about....."

"Well, just some old stories about us" Caira interrupted with a shrug.

"seriously?" Mikel asked playfully

"Yeah, you got any problem with that?" Caira asked as she arched her brows in confusion

"I'm so killing you tonight!!" Mikel said as he lifted her up in his arms and carried her all the way to the bedroom.

"Mikel can you please stop talking dirty in front of the kids" Caira said as Mikel placed her on the bed.

"Is there any problem with that? Or do you want us to have it at the kids room?" Mikel asked as he took off his jacket

"Gosh! You're so insane!!" Caira muttered as she folded her arms beneath her bust. Mikel noticed that she was quite moody and was a bit aggressive that evening

"Babe, what's up with you?" Mikel asked

"Nothing" Caira replied grumpily

"No, I think there is something bothering my ballerina" Mikel asked as sat beside her and attempted kissing her neck, but caira moved away.

"What's today's date?" Caira asked looking away

"February 15, why do you ask?" Mikel said

"What are we supposed to be having today?" Caira asked begrudgingly

"Our 10 years wedding anniversary, I got..."

"See, you completely forgot" caira muttered with a shrug.

"C'mon sweetie, how can I ever forget the most special day in my life, the day I wedded my better half" Mikel asked but caira still wasn't convinced, so mikel walked out of the room and came back with a red gift bag

"I never forgot babe, I got you something, sorry I left it in the car" Mikel said as he handed the gift bag over to caira while she accepted it in excitement. as soon as she opened the bag, she saw a beautiful black dress, it was just simple and beautiful. It appeared quite familiar but she couldn't recall where exactly she saw the dress. Mikel watched her as she inspect the dress with a confused expression, and just when she was about saying something, he spoke out

"Remember this dress?" Mikel asked while caira nodded negatively

"Remember when we first met at the mall and faught over a dress?" Mikel asked while Caira froze for a moment as she tried recalling.

"Oh my goodness, this was the same dress we faught over!! How did you get it?" Caira asked as the memories of their first encounter came flashing on her mind.

"Well, I ordered it. I just thought I was still owing you something" Mikel answered as he wrapped his arms around her waist.

"Awwn, thank you so much, I've received so many expensive gifts from you, but this is the best, thanks for bringing back sweet old memories" Caira said as she gave him a warm hug

"Thanks for making up a big part of me, thanks for not giving up on me and always believing in me, despite all the mistakes I made in the past, despite how much I hurt you, you still gave me so many chances to change and mend my ways. My entire life changed the day I met you, you brought me out of depression and loneliness and showed me what true love felt like, I love you Caira, no matter how old we grow, in my eyes, you'll always be that adorable innocent teenage girl I met 16 years ago. Happy anniversary darling" Mikel said as he stroked her hair gently.

"I love you too Mikel, happy anniversary my better half" caira said with a charming smile

"Alright babe, what would you like for dinner?" Caira asked as she stared directly at his attractive lips and await a answer

"What do you have to offer?" Mikel replied with his hands still wrapped around her waist.

"Mac and cheese, Rice Krispies, pasta and sauce, chicken and waffles, pizza.....

"What about something more spicy?, The dinner can come later" Mikel whispered as he kissed her slowly on the neck and trailed his hands down her butt, the kiss became intensified as he ate deep into the hollows of her neck while caira moaned quietly, ensuring that the kids doesn't hear her voice. He moved his hands to the back of her dress and pulled down her zipper.

"You have no idea how much I want you inside of



me, rip me off tonight" Caira whispered while Mikel grabbed her with both hands and carried her to the bed.

結束

Kindly Hi NovelsRepublic on +2348055889183 on WhatsApp to get added to our novels group and get PDF links